

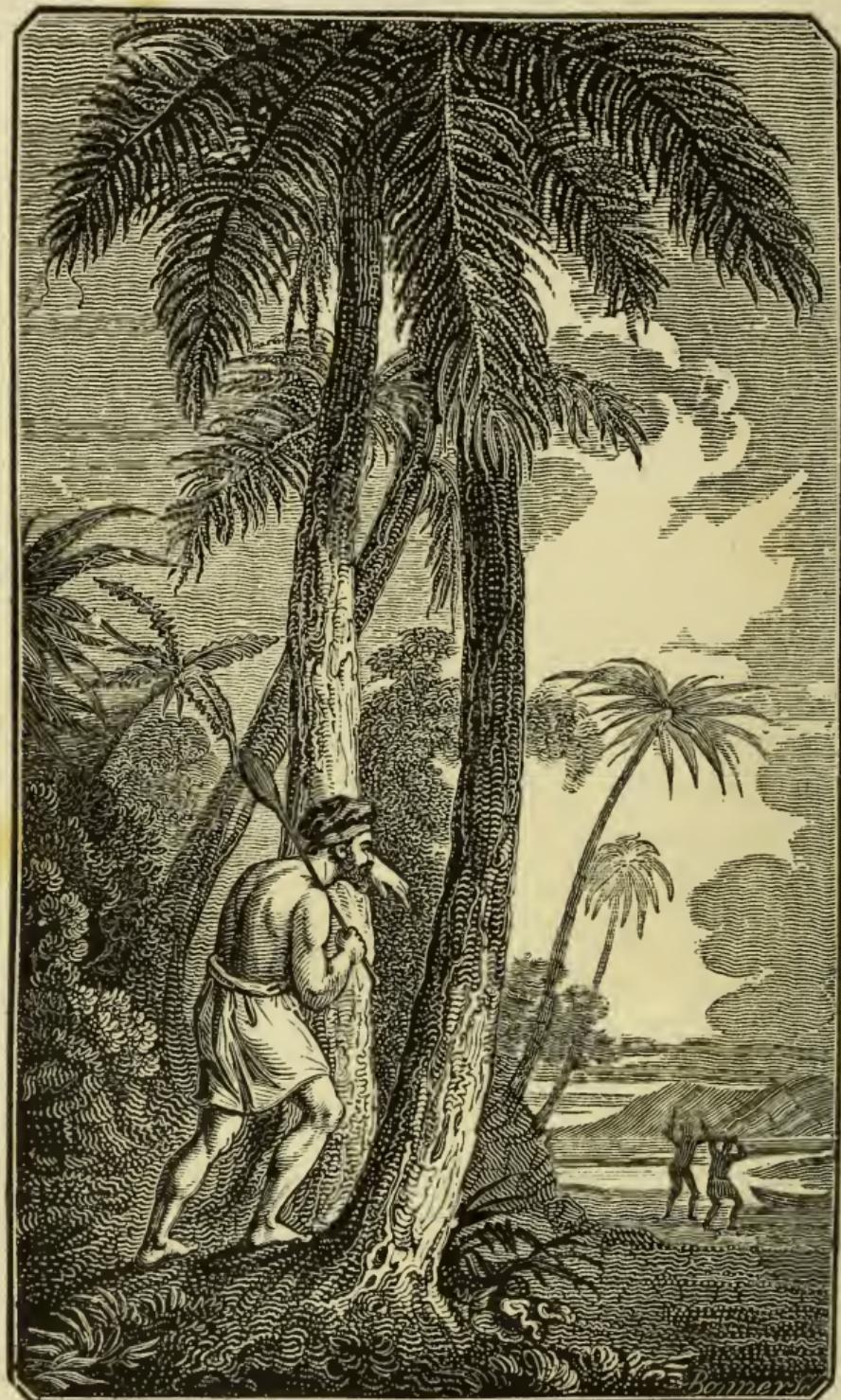


1891



Digitized by the Internet Archive
in 2013





Boerner

Mr. Mowington
Somerset County

THE

JOURNAL

OR

LLEWELLIN PENROSE,

A

SEAMAN.



A NEW EDITION.

LONDON:
PRINTED FOR TAYLOR AND HESSEY,
93, FLEET-STREET,
AND 13, WATERLOO-PLACE, PALL-MALL.

MDCCCXXV.

LONDON:

PRINTED BY S. AND R. BENTLEY, DORSET STREET.

RBR
Jan 2
#420

ADVERTISEMENT.

THE following pages contain the whole of "*The Journal of Llewelin Penrose*," as originally published in 4 vols. 12mo. with some slight corrections to adapt it the better for the perusal of Young Persons.

The interest of the Narrative, which is not surpassed by any work except "*Robinson Crusoe*," and the delight it is known to have afforded all classes of readers, but especially the young, are the considerations which have led to the re-publication of it in a compressed form, and at one-third its former price, so as to bring it within the class of works intended for the amusement and instruction of Youth.

London, 24th May, 1825.

TO

BENJAMIN WEST, ESQ.

MY DEAR SIR,

I MOST willingly avail myself of your kind permission, to dedicate to you the Narrative now offered to the Public. I venture to urge this request, not only because your intimate knowledge of the Author, and the circumstance of his having communicated to you many of the facts recorded in it, seemed to require it of me, but also because the respect which the public have long entertained for your virtues and talents might excite an interest for a work which has the sanction of your name. If I can induce the world to read the following pages, I am not fearful of the result of its judgment. It was a subject of pleasing recollection to my father, that this extraordinary Narrative first led him to your acquaintance; and I am happy that the honour has

been extended to myself. From your conversation I have received both pleasure and instruction; and permit me, my dear Sir, to add, that the kindness which I have experienced from you, renders me more devoted to an art which boasts in you a Professor so liberal and enlightened. May you long continue in the enjoyment of the distinction which your merit has obtained !

I am,

My dear Sir,

With great respect and esteem,

Your most faithful and obedient Servant,

JOHN EAGLES.

ADVERTISEMENT

TO THE

FIRST EDITION.

SOME years since an old man, who had apparently seen better days, applied to my father for charitable relief. His language and address bore a character of interest that must have struck the least minute observer. My father was, however, a man of discrimination, as well as feeling, who seeing how ill the superior cultivation of his mind adapted him for the common receptacle for paupers, (which was his object,) supplied his immediate wants; which benevolence continuing from time to time, he was so much charmed with his good sense and conversation, that he became much attached to him. He supplied him with the necessaries of life; and after some time, was enabled to place him comfortably in the Merchants' Alms-house in this city, endowed for the reception of decayed mariners, where, with some weekly addition to the allowance of the charity, he was

placed much above want. Here he enjoyed several years of tranquillity. He was beloved by all our family ; and such was the kindness with which my father treated him, that I have often, when a boy, seen the old man sit at our table with the familiarity of an old friend. In this asylum he died, and left to my father all he was possessed of. And let not the reader smile at his legacy, for it was not to be despised: it consisted of many volumes of books, collections of prints, MSS. ; in particular the following Narrative. It was not in my father's disposition to make inquiries into the details of private history, especially when it was probable they would excite painful sensations ; it is not to be wondered at, therefore, that he did not make himself acquainted with circumstances, the knowledge of which would now be so interesting.

It was extraordinary that a man of such a turn of mind, and with property of such a description, should have looked for an asylum among paupers : it was fortunate he met with a person so capable of appreciating his merits, and preserving to the world the Narrative bequeathed to him. But the incident which happily led to a more accurate knowledge of him was as interesting as it was unexpected. As an

account of it, I insert a memorandum found among my father's papers, dated 10th July, 1805.

“ Mr. Annesly brought Mr. West to my lodgings : he dipped into Penrose's Journal, and read several pages in different parts. I was from home when he came, but returned time enough to give him an account of the author. He seemed very attentive to my history of Williams, and put several questions to me : he said every answer I gave tended to confirm his opinion. ‘ Sir,’ said he, ‘ I have looked at several parts of this book, and much that I have seen I know to be true: I knew the man too, and what is more extraordinary, had it not been for him I should never have been a painter. It happened thus:—I had a relation at Philadelphia of the name of Pennington, whom I used frequently to visit while there. I saw a person carrying a picture—a landscape, the first I believe I had ever seen ; I was very much struck with it, and desired the person to show it to me ; he did, and asked me if I was fond of painting, and if I was, desired me to come to his house and he would show me other things. I saw there some cattle-pieces, admired them, and inquired how he could paint them so accurately. He said he would show me the secret, and took a small box, which proved to be a camera. He

showed me the construction of it. I went home, and was not at rest till I had made one for myself, and my father gave me the glass out of an old pair of spectacles to complete it. My delight was then to go into the farm-yards, and, by means of my camera, draw the cattle, &c. I knew that Williams had seen many of the things he describes in the Journal, and he gave me the same account of them. He first lent me the *Lives of the Painters*, which confirmed my inclination for the art. On my return from Italy, I sent to my friends in America my picture, as a remembrance of me, I had painted whilst abroad. I received a letter from Williams, for that was his name, with a complimentary copy of verses, in which he was pleased to flatter me very highly; but what is more extraordinary, the lines may be considered as prophetic of my future success in life, which it anticipates. I have his letter and the verses by me now somewhere. I take it he adopted the name of Penrose* from a great ship-builder of that name, who was a great friend of his. Williams afterwards came to England. I was of some service to him in London, but of a sudden missed him from town; and on inquiring, I believe, of one Smith, an engraver,

* Nothing is more common among seafaring men, than the adoption of the names of their particular friends, instead of their own.

who knew him well, he told me he was gone to Bristol, as he was very poor, and had almost lost his eye-sight, to claim some provision to which he was entitled from the parish. I was struck with this coincidence with the history of Williams; it induced me to put further questions concerning him, which confirmed my opinion that it was my old friend's composition that was before me, and what you had shown me of the *Lives of the Painters*, I know to be his hand-writing.*

“ 13th. Saw Mr. West again. He said, ‘ Perhaps I am the only person in existence who could give any account of Williams’s life and manners. He first came to Virginia from London, in a ship commanded by Captain Hunter. Between this time and his appearance at Philadelphia, when I first met with him, was an interval of more than twenty years, which time I consider him to have passed in the adventures related in the *Journal*.’ ” I likewise find a letter from Mr. West to my father, wherein he makes the following mention of the Author:—

“ From the year 1747 to 1760, my attention was directed to every point necessary to accomplish me for the profession of painting. This often brought me to the house of Williams; and

* The MS. shown Mr. West was copied by my father from the original.

as he was an excellent actor in taking off character, he often, to amuse me, repeated his adventures among the Indians ; many of which adventures were strictly the same as related in your manuscript of Penrose, as was also his description of the scenery of the coasts, the birds on them, in particular the Flamingo birds, which he described, when seen at a distance, as appearing like companies of soldiers dressed in red uniforms. He spoke the language of the savages, and appeared to me to have lived among them some years. I often asked him how he came to be with them : he replied, he had gone to sea when young, but was never satisfied with that pursuit ; that he had been shipwrecked and thrown into great difficulties, but Providence had preserved him through a variety of dangers. He told me he imbibed his love for painting when at a grammar-school in Bristol, where his greatest delight was to go and see an elderly artist who painted heads in oil, as well as small landscapes."

I have given this account of the Author, thinking it might be interesting to the public. I avoid being lavish of idle commendations of the work, which will speak for itself.

JOHN EAGLES.

THE
JOURNAL OF PENROSE.

CHAPTER I.

SHOULD the following Journal ever reach my dear native country, I must intreat the reader not to expect any persuasive arguments to enforce belief, or language to adorn the story. I have neither skill for the one, nor learning for the other. My education did not exceed that of a common country school: I was thrown early into life; was obliged to think and act much for myself: experience gave me knowledge and confidence; it induced a habit of reflection, and taught me to accommodate myself to things and circumstances, which a refined education would at least have rendered more painful. With naturally a good constitution, I had that pliancy of temper, which on many occasions carried me through difficulties, - and enabled me to encounter dangers, that a more irritable disposition would have found insurmountable. I shall tell my story in plain and simple terms; and begin with a faithful narrative of every occurrence within my memory, from the day of my birth to the time I first left my native country to cross the Atlantic.

LLEWELLIN PENROSE is my name; I was born near Caerphilly, in Glamorganshire, in the month of May 1725; my father was bred to the sea, and was cast away in a ship belonging to Bristol, called the Union frigate, commanded by Captain Williams, who was his countryman, in the great January storm, off the Texel, in Holland. Of a fleet consisting of near sixty sail, only one Dutch dogger, which lay without, rode out the storm; all the rest perished. My mother, thus left a widow, with two children, myself and a sister five years younger, after a time married again. Her second husband was a schoolmaster; she removed with him into Worcestershire, then into Monmouthshire, and after that into Wales.

I may justly say this man was the innocent, or rather obstinate cause, of the many hardships I have since suffered. The influence he had over my mother's judgment gave him the sole direction in every thing that concerned her children.

I had been flattered and caressed by my mother from my infancy; she had attended to all my early propensities, with a view of assisting my inclinations in a permanent settlement for life. I was particularly fond of the sea, and was delighted with the accounts my father used to give of his different voyages. I had some little talent for drawing. Most of my early sketches were of boats and ships sailing in several directions. From this charming art I have derived great consolation, in various situations of my life; in the practice of it I have soothed many a bitter hour. The moment I took my pen or pencil in my hand, my cares were forgotten, my mind became calm, and I enjoyed a respite from every solicitude.

On my mother's second marriage, all my dreams of

happiness vanished ; my pursuits were counteracted, my amusements checked, and my inclinations no longer flattered, or even attended to. In short, it was decided by my father-in-law that I should be placed with a lawyer, a profession I was particularly averse to. My mother, in this, as in every other instance, submitted entirely to his judgment, and gave me lectures, day after day, on the duty of submission to those who knew what was best for me. I grew tired of these perpetual remonstrances ; I detested the law, and had a decided preference for the sea. I acquainted them with my resolution, with a decent firmness which they saw was not to be trifled with. Considering that my choice was more the effect of whim and caprice than of any natural tendency to that mode of life, they consented that I should go a voyage by way of trial ; hoping that the experiment would prove favourable to their wishes, and wean me from all further inclinations that way. After I had made three or four small trips, they renewed their dissuasions, and tried by every possible means to bring me to their way of thinking. Their opposition increased my attachment to the sea : I grew more obstinate ; and finding no abatement of persecution on their parts, I was resolved to put an end to all further altercation, and embark on my own account, without waiting for their consent or approbation.

I had a companion, whose name was Howell Gwynn : a similarity of disposition, an equally strong desire of roving and love of adventure, had united us in strict friendship. It was now war time ; we entered into an agreement to give our parents the slip, and try our fortunes in our own way ; we conducted our affairs so

artfully, that not a soul knew, or had the least suspicion of our elopement.

Here let me pause for a few moments, and acknowledge, with sincere contrition and many tears, the anguish of mind which the recollection of this step has occasioned in many subsequent periods of my life. The distress which my disobedience inflicted on a kind and tender mother, sunk deep into my heart ; it has haunted me at all times, and in every situation ; it has damped my joys ; it has aggravated my sorrows ; it has made me consider the many evils which had befallen me as the just visitations of heaven on filial ingratitude. I write this as a warning to others, to avoid the sorrows, the compunctions I have experienced ; and to assure them, that, even in this world, the contempt of parental authority does not go without severe and exemplary punishment.

Having found means to convey our clothes and other trifles away, with no more than four shillings in money, and a very thin wardrobe, we set off from our parents' houses very early in the morning, in the month of September, in the year 1744, to make the best of our way for Bristol. We took care to evade all inquiries, by going the cross roads, and sleeping in barns or stables, now and then begging a morsel of bread and cheese at farm-houses, pretending that we had been cast away, in order to make our money last the longer. As we passed through the village of Pill, we met a young man who had just returned from a cruise, in which he had been unsuccessful : he advised us to go back to our parents, and not think of adventuring to sea, where the advantages were by no means adequate to the dangers and difficulties we should have to encounter. We considered that our

reception at home would not be very agreeable, and resolved to proceed on our journey, which we accomplished ; and on our arrival at Bristol, found that our stock of money was reduced to three-halfpence.

The first thing we did was to find out the quay ; in our way to which place, we met a young man who was a kind of relation to me, and a sailor likewise ; he was much pleased with our determination, and undertook to get us births. The city was filled with privateers' men : my cousin took us to a rendezvous in the quay, the sign of the White Lion and Horse-shoe. We had not been long in the house before my companion Howell was persuaded to enter ; but I had a greater mind to become a good seaman, than to commence hero all at once, and therefore evaded all their temptations. In this I followed the advice of my kinsman, who observed, that it would be better for me to take a trip with him to Ireland, than to remain in a strange place without money.

My companion Gwynn took his leave of me, and set off for Kingroad, where he was to join his ship ; and from that hour we never met more. I remained all the evening with my cousin, and found him to be a fine hearty fellow, though somewhat too fond of grog. As I was no way inclined to drinking, I left him and his company, and went up-stairs to sleep on a rush-bottom couch, in the fore room. Before I was well asleep, I was roused by a most sad outcry of a boy, as I believed, under a most severe discipline. My alarm was greatly increased, by the most horrid imprecations from the person who was inflicting the punishment. I found him to be the landlord, and the cries proceeded from his wife. Hearing him soon after go down stairs, I resolved to follow him, and endeavour to find my

cousin. I groped my way into the fore-parlour, in order to rouse some of the snoring tars, but I might as well have spared myself the trouble; they were all so snugly moored in Sot's Bay, that it was out of my power to trip one of their anchors. At last I ran foul of a man in the entry, and found it to be my cousin. Let us, said I, get out of this house; I can stay no longer. Just at this moment the watchman passed; we took courage and hailed him; he bid us go to bed, if we were drunk, and be quiet;—we called out more loudly, *murder!* and desired him to knock at the door. Having procured the assistance of two brother watchmen, he thundered at the door to some purpose. We drew back into the parlour on hearing Mr. Bean, the furious landlord, coming down stairs with a candle; but no sooner had he opened the door than we rushed out, and told the watchmen that we greatly feared this fellow would murder his wife before the morning. We left them to settle the matter as they could. It was now about three o'clock, and we walked the streets till near six, when we entered another house called the Champion of Wales; there we got breakfast, and afterwards proceeded to the Gibb, where his boat lay; which, after purchasing a few necessary articles, took us down to Pill.

The wind coming round to the east, we stood down Channel the next day, and took in a loading of coal at Neath, from whence we proceeded to Cork. On the passage I learned that my cousin was the object of our landlord Bean's jealousy, and that a tight battle had taken place between them before I was disturbed.

On our arrival at Cork, as I was standing on the quay by the side of our vessel, a man suddenly seized me by the hand, and clapping my thumb between his

teeth, threw me over his shoulder and carried me into the nearest public house, where he called for a quart of ale upon my head as a new import. I was not a little surprised at this; but some of our people following, laughed, and said it was the custom among the porters. This man's name, I well remember, was Billy Vane.

Soon after this my cousin desired me to go on shore with him. He was much in liquor; and remembering the adventure at Bristol, I desired to be excused. He upbraided me with ingratitude, repeating all that he had done for me; but I was more afraid of the consequence of such an excursion than of his anger, and resolved not to go. He then told me I might march on shore and shift for myself, for that he had done with me. I took him at his word, left the vessel, and went on board a snow bound for London; to which place I worked my passage.

On coming to London I entered on board a privateer, not having a shilling in the world to help myself. This game I followed for some time with various success, and squandered my prize-money on shore, much in the same manner that other sailors do. After this I was pressed, and shifted from one ship to another, till I found means to make my escape, going under different names, as best suited my purpose.

Thus I spent my time till the year 1746. I then shipped myself on board an old Indiaman, called the Harrington, bound for Jamaica: she lay at the Red House, Deptford, one Hunter commander. With what little cash I had left, I purchased some few shirts and trowsers, a jacket, a Scots bonnet, a pair of shoes, and a small seaman's chest. The ship fell down to Gravesend, from thence to the Downs; and there I experienced the first thunder-storm I had ever been in on the salt water. The rain and the wind were so violent off the

shore, that she was soon on her beam ends. As we were then getting under weigh, the flashes of lightning were so quick, that I could scarcely keep my eyes open; but it was of short duration. After this we proceeded to Spithead, there to wait for the convoy. In three or four days we put to sea, being about one hundred sail, bound to different ports. Our convoy was a ship called the old Chatham, of fifty guns; our ship mounted twenty guns, with a letter of marque on board. We parted company in the Bay of Biscay, and proceeded alone. Nothing worthy notice happened on our passage, except that some of our main-top-men, during the time we were exercising the great guns, chanced to set the mizzen top-mast stay-sail on fire, as they were busy in the main-top; but it was soon happily extinguished; nevertheless, it put all hands in a great hurry, as no misery can equal that of a ship on fire in the main ocean.

After this we made the islands of Antigua, Mount-serrat, Nevis, and St. Christopher's; and passing between them, we spoke with a French flag of truce. A few nights after, we ran in with the Isle of Vash on St. Domingo, in a very dark night indeed, but saw it time enough to avoid any danger.

The next day we came abreast of the White Horses on the south shore of Jamaica: here the pilot came on board, and we got safe into Port Royal. I must observe that our first captain did not go the voyage with the ship, and Mr. William James, then chief mate, took the command at Spithead.

During our stay here Admiral Davers died; and as all the ships in the harbour were firing minute-guns on the occasion, when it came to our turn one of the guns on the larboard-side discharged before its due time. I

happened to be standing on the gang-way, and saw a young man of the name of Palmer sinking: the blood flew from his head and arms like a spout, and a piece of his skull I found in the main-chains. This unhappy young man had been sponging the gun, and left some of the old cartridge on fire within: on ramming down another, it immediately took fire, and blew him to pieces, at the same time blasting the fingers of the boatswain, which were held on the touch-hole.

About the latter end of November, having our full loading, we set sail for London; but the Almighty was pleased to frustrate our intentions, and to disperse us in a wonderful manner. We beat to windward for several days, to little purpose; at length we carried away our fore-top-mast, top and all: two of our hands went overboard with it, but saved their lives.

Our commander then proposed to bear away for Blewfields, to repair our damages. After we had got up a new top and top-mast, we put to sea, and bore away for the Gulf of Florida. Sometime after this, on a blustery night, we had like to have ran on shore on the Isle of Pines: however, we wore ship, and stood off again. From this time the weather proved very hazy, with small rains; and in this sort it continued until Christmas Eve. Every mess was now busy in making puddings; but, alas! now began the prelude to our future troubles.

A squall arose about the second watch, and all hands were called out. It blew for about half an hour: after this we jogged on under an easy sail until break of day. Little did I think at the time, that it would prove so fatal a Christmas day to me!

Our chief mate, Mr. Ramage, shortly after he came on deck, spied a sail right a-head of us; directly all

hands were called to quarters, as she was lying-to, not two miles from us. Just as this happened, we discovered the Moro Castle, quite plain, under our lee. Now, as the enemy was stern-to, we could not judge of her force, nor did she seem to take the least notice of us; and as we were in no kind of fear about her, we stood on. We soon came abreast of her, and found her to be a ship of force. She bore down into our wake, hoisted Spanish colours, and began to fire several random shot at us: we directly ran out two stern-chasers, and crowded all the sail we could; but in a short time after, away went our main-top-gallant-mast; and as the enemy then gained on us fast, our captain ordered the ensign to be hauled down.

The ship we struck to was a Spanish man-of-war, and called El Fuerto, mounting fifty guns, commanded by Captain Mahony, a good-natured old Irishman. We were carried into the Havannah, and there our crew was divided on board of two men-of-war, viz. the Dragon and Conquestador; so that, I well remember, my Christmas dinner was changed from plumb pudding to horse beans and poor jerked beef.

In this place we remained prisoners, and had the grief and mortification to see flags of truce come in and go out every day; it being a practice for flags to visit the Spaniards from North America, laden with flour and other articles; and this trade was supported by the sneaking contrivance of their bringing and taking away one or two prisoners at a time, that by this low cunning the game might last the longer; whilst hundreds of his Majesty's loyal subjects were detained and forced to hard labour in the Moro Castle, carrying stones to repair their enemy's fortifications, against their wills.

Our employment on board the two ships was picking of oakum, pumping ship, hoisting in their water, and the like. We had our birth allotted between two great guns on the lower deck. A proposal was made by some of the most experienced of our companions in captivity, to form a set of laws amongst ourselves, as well for our better preserving peace, as not to give any unnecessary offence to our enemies. To avoid this, it was determined never to mention the word Spaniard, but to substitute that of *Hoopstick* in its stead. By this means, we could talk freely about them at all times, as none of them understood English.

The Spaniards took much pleasure in hearing us sing, or seeing us play at cards. Whenever a quarrel ensued, it was decided on shore by a boxing-match, to the great derision of our enemies, as on such occasions they never failed to call them *Peros Engleses*, English dogs.

We were served every day with fresh beef from the town, but as poor as carrion ; yet we had bread enough, so that we used to sell a part to the marines on board. They likewise took our money on shore, and bought roots or greens for us. Upon the whole, therefore, we did not fare badly.

Mass was performed by them regularly and decently every day. I wish I could make as good a report of my countrymen ; but the truth is, they not only shewed no signs of religion, but, on the contrary, gave great offence to the Spaniards, by assembling below during the time of their devotions, singing and dancing, and making merry at their expence. For this some of them were frequently laid in the stocks ; which is done by laying the person on his back, with his neck in the hole, and a block under his head.

It happened, while we were there, that news came of the accession of Ferdinand to the throne of Spain ; in consequence of which there were great rejoicings for several days: medals were struck and thrown to the populace, bells jingled the whole time, and a castle was erected, in order to be attacked by an English ship drawn through the streets on a carriage. On her quarter-deck was placed the figure of Admiral Vernon; her rigging was hung with all kinds of fire-works; so that, when she came to attack the castle, she was soon on fire, when poor Vernon was sacrificed to gratify their rancour. Thus ended this farcical pantomime.

After we had been here for about six weeks, they thought proper to send us away in an old leaky sloop. The appointed day arrived, and she came alongside to take us on board, and then to proceed to Jamaica as a flag of truce. There were on board this vessel five or six Spaniards, with an Irish captain, who knew no more of the sea than a parson; and, to the best of my memory, about seventy of us.

We proceeded to beat through the old Straits of Bahama under a ship's nurse. The sloop worked so ill, that she had her wake ever on the weather-crutch, the pump continually going; this, added to our pilot's ignorance, made them at last give her in charge to our mate Mr. Ramage, to navigate her to the island of New Providence.

In the course of our voyage we met with two sail, who took out a few of our people; the rest, by some means or other, found that there was cash hidden in some water casks. This was imparted but to a few; and they took measures to secure the booty to themselves, and were resolved to defend it. The Spaniards were somehow or other informed of this; and just as we

came abreast of Rose Island, near to New Providence, Ramage remonstrated with the men to restore the money, but they peremptorily and boldly denied having stolen it. At this time the wind died away, and the monied heroes insisted on having the boat hoisted out to go on shore, thinking that it was Providence itself. What they could not obtain by entreaty they took by force, and left us to sink or swim, as it might happen ; but providentially the wind sprung up, or we had certainly all foundered. This breeze brought us into the port, just as the heroes were crossing over from Hog Island to the town. The captain immediately laid his complaint before Tinker, who was at that time governor, and as great a trickster as those the captain laid his charge against, as report then went. Some of them were taken up and examined before his Excellency ; but they had all found means to secrete the cash, except Frank Harris, with whom some of the dollars were found. This poor young fellow was, by the governor's orders, clapped into the fort ; and after being several times obliged to ride on the wooden horse, was forced to enter as a grenadier.

In this place we rambled up and down, half naked and all friendless, without the means of present support, or the prospect of future assistance. I shall here give the reader a rough sketch of my person as I then appeared; viz. a long pair of ragged and narrow Spanish trowsers ; a fragment of an old blue shirt, not enough to pass under my waistband ; part of an old red handkerchief round my head, with my old blue bonnet, but without either shoe or stocking to my feet. This place being full of privateers, one way or other we all entered.

CHAPTER II.

NOT yet convinced of my folly, and drawing but little advantage from my past sufferings, in a fatal hour I entered on board a schooner, called the Recovery, of which one James Strike was commander, in the year 1747, on a cruise—against whom? alas! as it proved, against my poor self. Having obtained a few dudds, as the sailors term clothes, from the skipper, which were to be paid for out of our prize-money, I considered, that as I was going with a set of people whose manners were very different from those of my own countrymen, I might as well provide myself with hooks and lines for my profit, as well as pleasure, on the cruise. I accordingly laid in a store of these, and other trifling articles. We sailed out at the east end, as they term it, and after a short time came to at an island called Andross. Here we staid but a short time; then stood away for another island, called the Bimmeny, above one hundred miles ~~west~~ of Providence. The batteau, or canoe, was now hoisted out; we were all in high spirits. Some of our officers went on shore with fowling-pieces; in the mean time, others of the crew fell to fishing. This life was perfectly agreeable to my mind. In the evening our people came down on the shore, and the boat went and brought them off; but not in so good a condition as when they left us; for it happened that one of them, rambling about by himself, and not being perceived by another, who was then taking aim at a bird, received part of the shot in a very tender part. He was almost mad with the smart

for a time ; but he was with a set of people who were not very compassionate, and who turned his sufferings into ridicule and diversion : when he was brought on board, the doctor restored him in a few days.

From hence we crossed the Gulf for the Florida Keys, and on one of them our people shot three birds, such as I had never before seen. They were, when erect, near six feet high, and red as vermillion ; the neck and legs being extremely long, but the body no bigger than a fat hen. We had plenty of rum on board, but I observed not the least economy amongst the crew ; and indeed I began myself to relish it pretty well ; and I shall here give the reader a specimen of our frugality and temperance. At Key-west, where there is plenty of water, we determined to spend a few hours at the sign of the Fountain, as we termed the spring. Some of our most valiant pot-heroes took flasks of rum and a quantity of sugar on shore, and, seating themselves round the well, discharged the rum and sugar into it : of this mighty bowl I partook. When it grew weaker, we replenished with spirits, till the greater part, by hooping, jumping, and singing, grew tired and fell asleep. N. B. These wells are casks sunk in the sand, with holes bored through them.

While we lay snoring on the grass, the man at the helm cried out, "A sail, ho !" We were soon awake, and hurried on board ; and what was more extraordinary, in a few minutes every man appeared to be perfectly sober—so great an effect had this alarm on our spirits. The sail appeared to the southward, and we gave chace under all the sail we could crowd right large. We chased her the whole evening, without gaining the least upon her. The next morning she was out of sight,

having altered her course. We then hauled our wind and stood in-shore again. Shortly after this we discovered some of the savages coming down; but as they were too shy to come on board, we ran in closer, and some of our valiant heroes took the whim of firing on them,---a most brutal and cruel resolution, at once the extreme of barbarity and cowardice. While they were at this game the schooner got aground: the skipper began to rave, and ordered all the tallest of the crew overboard, to shove her off again. Their courage upon this began to ebb, as they were fearful of being wrecked upon that inhospitable shore; but they soon hove her off.

The next day we saw two sail in the offing, and gave chace. We came up with them in the evening: they proved to be two small sloops of no value; we therefore took the hands out, and set them on fire. The wind fell, and it became a dead calm; so that it was astonishing to see the columns of smoke which rose from them. After this we stood away for the west end of Cuba, and there landed our prisoners. In this latitude we cruised for some time, when one day the man cried, "A sail on the weather bow!" We directly gave chace; but as she was going large, we soon got the wind of her. The chase then began to crowd all the sail she could make; but we overhauled, and got within cannon-shot of her about five in the evening. She proved to be a Spanish ship of fourteen guns, and engaged us for about two glasses. We had three men killed and seven wounded: she shot away our jib-stay and two of our shrouds. This put us in some confusion; and during the time it took in putting stoppers on them, she hauled her wind and ran for it. We soon made after, but lost her in the night: in the

morning she could not be seen from the mast-head. This day we were in the latitude of 17 North.

We had now been out a full month, and had taken nothing of value; so that our crew began to murmur greatly, and begged of the captain to cruise on the Spanish Main: he objected that our provisions would soon run short. A general discontent prevailed among the people. I began to wish heartily that I had never come among them; and as we had some of the true descendants of the old buccaneers amongst us, did not know what they might intend. At length they privately drew up a round robin: the major part of the crew signed it; but I declined putting my hand to the paper. The officers, finding this, were obliged to comply, and away we shaped our course for the Main shore.

A few days after this, the wind came to blow fresh at north, and increased so that we were forced often to lie-to; at length it became more moderate. We were now in the latitude of 15; and in the night, one of our hands cried out, "Breakers a-head!" We tacked immediately, but had only time enough, and that was all. As the wind died away, we let go our anchor in eight fathoms, and thus waited for day. When the morning came (a morning I never longed more for in my life), we found the vessel surrounded with rocks and shoals. Not above two of our hands knew where we were, and they were not steady in the same opinion. At last they agreed it to be those dangerous shoals called *Quita Swenens*, or *Prevent Sleep*. My mind became extremely anxious: I considered the very forlorn state in which we were, with a small vessel full of people, and no more than one

poor canoe to help us in case of extremity. One of our quondam pilots advised to stand away for Santa Catarina, where we arrived two days after, took on shore water-casks, and boot-topped the vessel. Here our noisy companions took it into their heads, that they should have no luck till they finished all the remainder of the rum on board. After the water was secured the game began ; and matters were carried to such a height, that it became one round of drinking, fighting, and uproar ; and, but that we had a good commission on board, it had more the appearance of a piratical expedition, than a lawful cruise against the enemies of our country. The next day we stood away to the southward, and on the morning after a sail hove in sight. We chaced her the whole day long, gaining but little upon her. On the morrow we saw her right on the lee-bow ; we had the wind then northerly. The chace was now renewed, and we seemed to come up with her hand over hand, when she altered her course right before it, and left us like the wind. About sunset we saw land, and took it for the Main, so kept under an easy sail all that night. On the morrow we found she had given us the slip, and that we had neared the shore greatly by a current. We stood in for a few hours, and then ran along, ranging the shore, at the distance of about four leagues, until the evening, when we fell in with the soundings in thirty fathoms : shortly after it shoaled to sixteen, with patches of rocks. Here we hove-to, and all hands fell to fishing, with good success. While we were all busy at this sport, a tortoise swam alongside : they called for the grainge, and three of us jumped into the canoe, then alongside, and pushed after it, but without

success. As it was now almost dark, when we came back, they veered her astern, and I remained in her, being very much in liquor, as that day we had finished the last drop of rum on board.

CHAPTER III.

How long I slept I know not: the great motion of the boat awakened me; and as I was rubbing my eyes, to my great astonishment, I missed the schooner. The consternation this threw me into, sobered me at once: what to do, or how to act, I was for the moment incapable of judging. Horrible was now my condition, as the wind freshed up more and more. At last I saw a flash and heard a gun go off, but it was a great way out; and for me to pretend to gain the vessel again, was utterly impossible: I therefore gave up the thought.

I drove, and continued to bale as I drove, in a sort of despair, till the dawn of the day.

I was now close in shore, and put into a small beach, where I ran the canoe on shore, jumped out and hauled her up. I could just discern the privateer in the offing, a great way out. While I was thus standing and eagerly gazing about, I saw a large brig stretching out, as in quest of our vessel; she was near enough for me to see she was a cruiser. I now walked about in a state of distraction I know not how to describe, and sometimes sat on the gun-wale of the canoe. It is impossible to give a just idea of the state

of my mind: I remained thus absorbed as it were, till I lost sight of both vessels. I now began to look round me, and could see nothing but a wild country of palmetto trees and shrubs; but whether inhabited or not by human beings, I was perfectly ignorant.

As I sat musing what was next to be done, having no more than a sailor's frock over my shirt, a pair of petticoat trowsers, my knife in one pocket, and my fishing-tackle with a few hooks in the other, and my bonnet on my head, (these, with the canoe, paddles, and grainge, were all my store,) the first thing I determined upon, in this my state of desolation, was to procure a large stone for a killick to my boat: this made me naturally cast an eye on the painter, which I found had slipped the be-laying.

At the end of the bay where I had landed, ran out a reef of rocks. While I was gazing every where around me, to my great surprise I discovered a man standing on the shore: I saw that he was naked and held a kind of oar in his hand; I concluded it was a savage, and he was not more than two hundred yards from me. I directly laid myself flat on the rocks, that I might observe his motions without discovering myself. I soon perceived that he was walking towards me; my breath grew short, my heart beat in my breast so violently, that I could scarcely contain myself. I was at once to determine whether to speak to him or not. My situation was become truly dreadful. The prospect I had before me, was either to starve with hunger, or to deliver myself into the hands of merciless savages, who would probably soon put an end to all my troubles and my life together. I looked up to heaven, resolved to rely upon Providence, and determined to show myself, as he was now within sixty yards of me. I

therefore got up, and stepped down upon the beach. When he first saw me, he halted ; I then hailed him, and made signs for him to come on : the first salutation was, he clapped his hands over his eyes leaning forward, then spread them abroad ; I did the same. Upon this he stepped up to me, and held out his hand ; I received it in mine : he looked me full in the face, and said “Christinos ?” I answered, “Si, señor.” He then stooped down and made a cross with his finger in the sand, laid his hand on my shoulder, and motioned me to follow him. I did so, and we walked along the shore : he talked to me the whole time, but I could not understand a word. At last we came to a small inlet : here was his canoe, and in it a woman quite naked, and a little boy about three years old with her, in the same state : she seemed to be greatly alarmed at the sight of me. The man, who appeared to be about fifty years of age, used all means to pacify her fears. Seeing this, I went to the side of the canoe, and patted the child on the head : this, I found, pleased the man much ; he gave me a piece of half roasted turtle out of his canoe, which I devoured greedily, not having tasted a morsel since I went adrift. The man now gave a sort of cry, as to a person at a distance : I looked and saw a boy run among the high grass. The Indian gave me a sign to stay by the canoe, and away he went after him. Upon this the woman set up her pipes and began to bawl to some purpose, the child bearing his part. The Indian was obliged to return, and he took me along with him. We went in among the grass, and with some difficulty brought out the other boy : the poor lad was so terrified, that I presume he had never seen a white man before. When we came back, the woman began her noise

again. I observed they had several articles, such as turtles, eggs, guanos, and the like, in the boat, which was not above two feet wide, although she was above sixteen feet long: after this the man and boy got into her, and I naturally supposed they would give me a seat with them. The woman still kept on her clamour, and the man handed me out a large calabash by a string, and pointing to a place, said, "Agua, agua." Understanding that he meant water, I ran off to fetch it; but after searching for some time could find none. What was my surprise on preparing to return to the boat, when I saw the Indians paddling off as fast as they could, and they were then above fifty yards from the shore. I stood like one thunderstruck, fixed to the spot. At length I hailed, but to no purpose: I saw them get round a point of rocks, and felt myself as one left alone in the world.

The sun was now set, and I had to walk back to my canoe. As I was returning, it came into my head, that my late new friend had certainly handed me out the calabash as a stratagem, that, by thus employing me, he might have time to escape; judging, that by the woman's behaviour she would not consent to my going with them, from some prejudice against me, or fear of my doing them any injury. At length I got back to the canoe, and seated myself on the stern-sheets; I then hauled up the boat as high as I could: I pulled off my frock, and, as I lay at my length in her, covered my breast with it, to keep off the dew, which falls heavy in these parts. I now began to think it possible that I might again see the schooner the next day; but, alas! these eyes never beheld the Recovery more.

How soon I fell asleep I know not; nor did I find

myself awake till the sun was high. I looked wistfully towards the offing, but no schooner was to be seen. I was forced to cut a bit of lead off my poor sinker, to chew, as I was almost choking with thirst. After this, in a kind of stupor, I walked along the shore to hunt for food. I found plenty of welks (a shell-fish;) these I broke against the rock-stones; took them to my boat, where I sat down and ate four of them raw as they were, with the tears of true sorrow trickling down my cheeks; and now had my cap been full of dollars, they should all have gone for one stick of fire.

The next thing was to go in search of water; I wandered about for more than an hour, and returned without finding any. In this ramble I conjectured that I was on an island, by its position, or at least a long point of land. I took another excursion, which carried me to a point terminating with rocks and a small reef. On my return I took out my paddle and went toward the point; and finding a clear place of sand, fell to digging. This work cost me an hour's hard labour, but still no success. I then threw down my paddle, and afterwards myself flat on my face, not caring whether I lived or died. After a time I got up, thinking to return, launch my boat, and put along shore the other way; but as I stooped to take up the paddle, to my unspeakable joy, water had sprung up in my well. I instantly stooped down and tasted it with my hand; it was brackish, but tolerable. This was indeed a great relief. I fell on my knees and returned thanks. Having drunk my fill, I returned to the canoe, never ceasing to express my gratitude to that kind Providence, who had in so short a time provided me with meat and drink, when I had so lately despaired of finding either.

I now became easier in my mind, having no longer the dread of absolutely starving. I went back, brought my calabash full of water, placed it in my boat, and then took a walk along shore westward. In this excursion I found a conch; and with a stone, returned, sat down on the bow of my boat, and worked round the crown of the shell until I drew out the fish; and as it is of a sweet taste, found it very pleasing to my palate. In the evening I prepared to compose myself to rest, and slept soundly the whole night. Next morning by day-light I walked along the shore, as far as the little creek where the Indians forsook me. Here I finished the remains of my conch, and then went on through the creek about two miles farther; here I could plainly see the extent of my island. I mounted on an old dead tree to look out, and, to my great sorrow, found it to be not above half a mile over: this alarmed me much, as I considered it to be a very poor place of residence for me. As I was thus exploring round, I saw at about the distance of five miles a more promising shore, of a much larger island, or perhaps the Main itself. I hurried down, and made back for my boat as fast as I could, being determined, if the weather proved moderate, the next day to take my leave of this place. The rest of the day I spent in preparing for my departure.

I never failed to keep a sharp look-out after the schooner, as I was far from giving her up entirely; but finding she did not appear again, I supposed the brig I had seen stretch out for her had either taken her or sunk her: if not so, perhaps they had shaped their course some other way, not caring to risk the seeking for me or the boat again. At other times I imagined they had returned to those Maroon islands again, and had either bilged on them, or foundered at sea. Thus,

agitated betwixt hope and despair, I passed my lonely hours: I could not sleep for the great hurry of my mind. About midnight, it rained so hard and lasted so long, that I was drenched with water in the canoe: at last it began to hold up, and the day came on as still as a clock. I then got out, took my frock and wrung it well, and threw it on the grass to dry; I did the same by my shirt and trowsers, and began to bale out my boat. I then took my calabash to drink, and found the rain had so freshened it, that it quite raised my spirits. After this I clapped on board my killick, got my boat afloat, and replaced my calabash: I then took a walk along shore, gathered about twenty welks, and threw them into her. By this time my shirt and trowsers were tolerably dry; I put them on, and prepared for departure.

I paddled along shore for some time, passed the place where my well was, then ventured out to double the reef of rocks; which having done, I stood away north on new discoveries. The deepest water I found to be about three fathom, and often not one. After I had been on my voyage for about three quarters of an hour, I observed, on a small key, some odd white spots: thither I turned; and, as I drew nigh, an incredible number of birds of many kinds rose like a cloud about me, and their noise made me almost deaf. Here I landed, and found the white spots I had seen to be king-conches. These shells are so large, some of them will contain three quarts of water. I put five of them into my boat, and then began to gather the eggs that lay all about me. While I was at this work, the pelicans would brush by my head so close, as almost to knock off my bonnet.

I now put off for my new shore, and in about an

hour got close in under the land: here I found it bluff to, then a beach, the land overgrown with trees. As I paddled along, I espied a kind of creek, about a pistol-shot over: in I put, and found the water to shoal to about four feet. I was so delighted with these new scenes, that fear never once entered into my head. I found the land on both sides about the height of a boat's mast; but as I advanced in farther, I discovered it to be a lagoon, or lake. Here the mangrove trees hung over my head loaden with oysters, like traces of onions. It abounded with fish of divers kinds, in great abundance; the spoon-bills, galdings, and cranes, sat on the trees, without taking much notice of me, as being seldom used to the sight of men. At length I came to an opening: fortune having directed me to the left, this brought me to another branch, where it opened wide all at once. Here I found a small sandy shore; I threw out my killick and jumped on the land.

It was now about meridian, as I judged by the sun. I walked up the bank and found the soil bare, with rocks for about one hundred yards round; and as I stood looking about, I saw a kind of gap at some distance, among the trees. Thither I walked; and, when I came to examine the place, I found to my surprise another branch, and that I was got on a small precipice, with a pretty sandy beach beneath me. I then looked out for some way to get below; and as I was doing this, I saw plainly over the trees, the island I had left in the morning. At last I got down on the sands below; here I found a cavern running into the rock. I examined the place, and thought it to be about fifteen feet deep; and looking round, the mouth appeared to be about ten feet in height, and eighteen

feet wide, with a gravel bottom. Here I seated myself, and found a piece of wood cut in the form of a mask: this made me believe that I was not the first human being who had visited this place.

I now returned to my boat, resolved to find out a way by water to this place, if possible. When I came with the canoe to the point of the opening, I cut a branch of the mangrove, and hung it up perpendicular, in order to know the place again. I then took to the other arm of the lagoon, and, in a short time after, found that it brought me round to the cave; and there I resolved to take up my abode for the present. I carried on shore all my little matters. My furniture consisted of my lines, three spare hooks, the calabash, and the five shells. After this was done, I seated myself on the ground, and began to regale myself on my raw welks. I finished my meal with a plentiful draught of water, then lay myself down and fell fast asleep.

As near as I can judge, it was about five o'clock when I awoke. The dread of my wants in future, now took full possession of my mind. I got, however, into my canoe, and went round to the place where my new signal branch hung; from thence paddled out to the mouth of the creek; after this I ran her ashore, threw out my killick, and went along the beach in search of food, but found only three welks; this increased my melancholy reflections. As I was moving on with my eyes bent on the ground, my ears were suddenly struck with a soft murmur as of water. I directly followed it; when going up to a small opening between the trees, to my unspeakable joy, I beheld a beautiful little linn of water, falling over a shelving rock; this was indeed a most valuable property to me.

I ran back to my boat, paddled away as fast as I could for my calabash, and returned with that, and two of my largest shells: these I filled, and then choked them up with stones, and returned to my cave with them, intending to go no more out till the next morning.

At the close of night, the mosquitoes and sand-flies began to annoy me much, which deprived me of many hours' sleep; but I had no remedy but patience. I crawled into the back part of the cave, and covered my face and hands with my frock, and by that means rested tolerably till the morning. The first thing I then did was to get a few panama-shells, as they are called; and with them I then concluded to keep my reckoning; by putting them into one of the conch-shells, which lay in the back part of the cave. I now went in search of conch bait, with a view of fishing, then returned into the lagoon, and there came to. I saw fish in great plenty; but so great was my fear of losing a hook, that if any fish larger than ordinary drew near the bait, I instantly drew up my line. I was lucky enough to catch seven or eight grunts, and with them went to the cave, and ate part of them raw: this was my constant practice. At length I found my strength diminish daily, owing, as I supposed, to my diet. I grew weak and lost my flesh; and I considered that if I went on thus much longer, my time would be but short in this land of desolation. The day was thus embittered by dismal reflections, and the night often passed without sleep. I had no other prospect before me but death, and looked upon this cavern as the repository of my mortal remains.

After I had been here about a month, I began to

give the schooner quite over, as lost to me for ever ; nor had I seen one thing since the Indian canoe in the form of a vessel. One evening the clouds began to gather very thick, and it came on to rain very hard, with terrible thunder and lightning. I was just at that time returned to the cave with a few conches. The storm lasted above two hours, and I had great reason to be thankful, that I had a dry house over my head.

Early the next day, as I was walking by the sea-shore, to my great surprise, I saw a smoke suddenly rising from the bushes at no great distance from me. I at once concluded there must be Indians near the spot. How to act I could not tell ; but considering that it was impossible for me to escape them long, and as the man I had met already had treated me kindly and well, I went resolutely up the beach, and peeped among the trees. But how can I express the joy which took possession of my soul, when I discovered it to proceed from an old tree on fire, by the accident, as I presumed, of the lightning ! I ran off immediately to my boat, and placed a quantity of sand a-midships. I then gathered a parcel of drift-wood, and filled the bow of the canoe ; and away I flew to get some of that precious element, laid it on the sand, and placed a few sticks over it. The joy I felt on this most happy occasion, almost turned my brain. With an air of satisfaction, I seated myself in the canoe, and paddled off with my prize to my cave. I was so much elated with this accident, that, in the moment of exultation, I could not believe that I now wanted for any thing.

N. B. I did not fail to return thanks to that compassionate God, who had thus, in his goodness,

provided me with one of the greatest comforts of human life, to cheer and enliven the solitude that surrounded me.

The moment I reached the shore, I transported my fire under a shelving projection of the rocks, to preserve it from the rain; and having now a blazing hearth, I directly fell to cooking some fish. It was a full month since I had tasted any thing but raw food; so grateful was this to my palate, that I cleared all I had caught. After I had finished my meal, I began to consider in what manner I should keep my fire burning. I knew the poppanack-wood would keep fire to the last bit; therefore, wherever I found any, I never failed to bring it home, and by this means preserved this precious element. I had often tried to procure it by rubbing two sticks together, but without success. Thus uniformly did I pass my time for seven weeks, keeping a regular account by my shells. I then took a fancy to explore the coast for some short distance, by way of recreation.

As I was wandering along the strand, in the course of my excursion I discovered something at a distance, which I could not immediately make out; but on coming nearer, I found, to my great surprise, that it was a small square chest, apparently of Spanish make;—on turning it over, it appeared to be still locked, and not very heavy: at a short distance lay a wooden bowl. I clapped the chest on my shoulder, and taking the bowl in my hand, returned to my boat, put them both in, and made my way up the lagoon. I soon landed my little freight, and then ran to my fire; found it in good order; and after trimming it, fell to examine the contents of my prize. I found it contain two blue striped shirts, one red and white striped ditto, one pair of

long striped trowsers, three pair of canvass ditto, four red silk handkerchiefs, a pair of shoes with silver buckles in them, two fishing-lines, a small bag of hooks and sail-needles, a roll of tobacco, a small spying-glass in a wooden case, two clasp-knives, and a ball of twine: these things I discovered by their make were not English.

The tobacco was good for nothing; the shoes I was fearful of using, lest they should bring my feet tender again, having gone so long without them. How these things came there, without my being able to discover any part of the wreck, I could not at that time judge. I stowed them away very carefully in my cave, renewed my fire, and then turned in for the night.

The next day I went in search of bait, and on my return prepared to go a-fishing. I was always successful, and never failed to catch a quantity of different kinds: my new mode of cookery made them doubly palatable; my strength began to increase, and in a short time my health was perfectly restored.

Some time after this, as I rambled along the shore, I found a small yard, a boat's rudder, and an empty cask: these proved to me that the chest had belonged to some small sloop, or schooner, wrecked on that shore some time past. While I thus explored the beach, I observed here and there the track of tortoises; I followed a very recent one up the sand, and coming to where it had been at work, fell on my knees, and began to turn up the sand. I soon found it was a false place. They are apt, as I have been informed, to practise this deception, either to prevent farther search, or not being pleased with the spot. I then took to another track, and found myself right. After digging a short time, I was surprised to see a parcel of young

ones, about the size of half-a-crown, waddling over my fingers: they were all of perfect turtle shape. I left them to shift for themselves, and proceeded to another place. Here I got about seventy-five eggs in good condition, went back to my boat; laid them in at two trips with my calabash, and returned home.

N. B. I always took home with me the drift-wood which lay in my way, and as much of the small brush as I could carry.

Thus I lived till the wet season came on; solitary and alone, it is true, but not altogether without comforts. I had suffered much, but had great reason to be thankful to Providence for the protection it had afforded, and the unlooked-for benefits it had bestowed upon me. I accustomed myself to very thin clothing, that my small stock might last the longer; I often went with nothing but trowsers; but now I was obliged to wear something more, as it was at times rather cold. My fire was made within my cave, lest the continual rains should deprive me of that blessing, which would have reduced me to a sad state of desperation.

I continued daily to lay up dry wood, as it rained more or less for above a month, according to my reckoning. In all this time I went no farther from home than to fetch palmetto-leaves to make my bed; now and then a-fishing in the lagoon, and to replenish my stock of water.

The weather now began to clear up again, and nature appeared in a short time dressed in a new livery. I then resolved to take a small trip in my boat. Having made every thing ready, and leaving a good fire, I put out of the lagoon in the morning, and stood over for the small bird-key, where I found such plenty of conches and welks, that after I had thrown above a

undred in my boat, I went on shore and got a few eggs, with three young birds, and then went off on my return. A very large shark followed me. As he swam with part of his tail and cobbler's knife above water, I judged him to measure about fourteen feet in length: he continued with me for some time, but on my throwing over a conch, he left me, and went down after it.

On my arrival at the cave, I began to roast a conch: in doing it I observed a bit of spongy stuff, which grew on a part of my fuel, to kindle and burn very quick. I directly broke it off, put it out, then touched it at the fire, and found that it would completely answer the purpose of tinder. As there was plenty of a bastard kind of white flint pebbles along the shore, I concluded that these with my knife would set me up. I was not easy till I tried the experiment, and found it to answer my purpose very well, though the flint was not of the dark kind we have in Europe. I procured a quantity of the punck from the dead stumps of trees; prepared a shell for a tinder-box, and was never without it, wherever I went, either on foot or in my canoe.

By my account, it now appeared that I had been on this shore about nine months. During the course of this solitary life, tears would often burst from me as I walked along; and this was some relief to that perpetual anxiety and perturbation of mind, which agitated my whole frame, and made me often wish myself dead. In fact I longed for the 'flesh pots of Egypt.' My regrets arose from being separated from a set of companions to whose habits and manners, however vicious, I was accustomed. I considered, if they were

fortunate, the prize-money they would divide amongst them, and how much would have fallen to my share to have squandered away in folly and dissipation. Alas ! I did not consider that a good God was so carefully watching over me for my benefit ; that the very evils I complained of were essential to my happiness ; that being thus separated, or rather selected from my vicious companions, was rescuing me from infamy and ruin ; and the placing me in a state of comparative innocence, where my reflections might purify my mind, was bringing me nearer to himself. I was young, vain, and foolish, and thought not of these things as I ought to have done.

But to proceed.—One morning I resolved to go along shore to the eastward. Here I found the land fall low, with many palmetto-trees growing in a sandy soil. At last I came to a small kind of inlet : here I went on shore, and after walking about twenty yards up a sand-bank, I found a fine salina, or salt pond ; and, reader, be not astonished, I discovered a large company of soldiers drawn up in battle array, in their regimentals ; enough to terrify a stouter man than I was, had I not been well acquainted with their peaceable disposition, they being nothing more than a large flock of flamingos. I had now an opportunity of observing the way these birds breed. They raise up a pyramid of sand in the pond ; in the top of it they make a pit ; over this they sit to lay and hatch their young, with their long legs hanging down on each side.

N. B. Although these birds are as red as scarlet when old, yet their young are for a time of an ash colour, growing redder by age : they are of a very

stupid nature, and will not move for the noise of a gun ; so that if a person can keep concealed, he may load and fire often, before they will take flight.

Not long after this, I counted over my shells, and found the number to be three hundred and fifteen. From that time, till I had completed my whole year, I remained in solitude, seeing nothing particularly to disturb my peace or to excite my hope.

CHAPTER IV.

SECOND YEAR OF MY LONELY CONDITION.

ABOUT a month after I had begun my second year, I had a very odd adventure. One evening as I was sitting on the shore, about two miles distant from my cave, I suddenly heard a great snort, which appeared to come from among the bushes. I jumped up and ran down to the boat as fast as my legs could carry me. After my first alarm was a little over, I began to reflect within myself what this could possibly be ; and in this mood I paddled along shore towards home, keeping a proper distance from land, for fear of a second alarm, or a surprise of any kind. Just as I passed a short bay, to my great astonishment, I thought I beheld a troop of Indians, marching along shore, right abreast of me. I was indeed greatly terrified. The first thing I did was to lie along in the canoe, lest they

should discover me, and thus to observe their motions; but I was soon happily undeceived, finding them to be nothing more than a small herd of about twenty deer. As I lay with my head raised up a little, my foot happened to tumble a shell: this caused the foremost to halt, and stare directly at the canoe; he gave two strong snorts, and immediately they all scampered up the beach into the woods. All my fears now vanished, and I put away for home as fast as I could.

Nothing but the deer ran in my head for several days together. As I had neither gun nor ammunition, I could not expect to succeed as a hunter, and therefore gave over all thought of a venison repast for that time.

N. B. There were here two sorts of lizards, with which I was at times greatly amused. One of these frequented the rocks above high-water mark, and, contrary to all others I have seen, had their tails in a curl on their backs. They were of a yellow brown, beautifully mottled with dark spots, and carried their heads quite erect, like little dogs; and they were seldom above five inches in length. Being acquainted with their manners, many times have I seated myself to watch them. First, three or four of them would come round me, look me in the face, and, if I began to whistle, would first turn their heads to one side, and then to the other, and listen very attentively; yet if I offered to stir, they were so alert as to be off in a moment. I could never, by any contrivance, catch one of them alive. The other sort is what they call in Jamaica the woodslave; they are larger than the former, and I remember the first I saw of them surprised me very much. It was on the limb of a low tree, and of a verdigrease green; but, during the time

I had my eyes on it, it began to change its colour, turning to a fine gold yellow, and from that gradually to a dead leaf colour, with brown stripes down the side from head to tail: from this it changed to deep brown, and lastly to a profound black. Some of these I caught now and then, by means of a small noose round the neck; and tying them afterwards round the loins with a bit of twine, kept them about my place for a week or more at a time. I could never discover that they took any food, except they occasionally caught a fly.

Thus I went on for several months; and in this time I made me a table and a stool, which I performed as follows:—I cut twigs and wattled them, after the manner I had seen the country people do at home; then fixed them on four uprights. I cannot boast they were quite so strong as I wished; for I never ventured to cut any thing very large with my knives, fearing to break one of them; and it was of the utmost consequence, in my situation, to preserve them unbroken.

I am now about to mention a singular circumstance, which, as it was the means of procuring me a companion, and was moreover attended with some drollery, I think worth reciting. Having been out one day to catch land-crabs, I tied three of them together, and left them on the beach, while I was gathering a few of those shells which our silversmiths make into snuff-boxes; thinking that if I should ever get home again, they might turn to some account. As I was busy at this amusement, I heard a noise over my head; and, looking up, saw a fish-hawk bearing off my bunch of crabs; but it happened unfortunately for him, for he

could not rise with them, and came down on the beach, crabs and all.

Though I must confess I was not in a very merry mood, yet the thing drew a smile from me, and of a truth it was the first since my landing here. When I came up to him, I found that two of those amphibious gentlemen had fastened on his leg. He soon commenced hostilities with me, fighting with his wings and beak; but to put an end to the contest, I took an opportunity and seized him by the neck, well knowing that my other myrmidons would not quit their hold. Thus I bore the whole bunch to my boat, and there first bound up his beak, then his leg, and brought safe home the whole body of disputants.

The first thing I did was to disengage them, by putting fire to the crabs, which soon set the hawk at liberty. I cut one of my new comrade's wings, and tied a small log to one of his legs; then cut the string from his beak to enlarge him. During the whole of this business, I must confess he did his best to defeat my purpose. This bird was of the most beautiful plumage, of a mixture of white, yellow, brown, and black; his legs and bill were yellow, and his talons black. He was about the size of our English kite, and his cry very much like that bird's.

I soon found my fear of his running away quite needless; his legs being short, he could make but little progress on the ground. These birds always devour their prey on the branches of old dead trees, from whence they watch the fish with a keen eye. The crabs had hurt his legs a little, so that he was lame, which made his confinement less irksome to him. I now offered him some broiled fish, which he disdain-

fully refused, nor would he taste a bit for two whole days; but, on the third, I observed, when I returned from fishing, that his stomach began to crave; the sight of the fresh fish increased his appetite, which I judged by his crying. I threw him some garbage; he eyed it for a while, and then fell on greedily, and devoured the whole in a short space. This so pleased me, that my mouth opened incontinently, and I cried out to him, "Much good may it do you, Mr. Yellow-bill!" In fact, they were the only words I had uttered loudly, from the time the Indians left me to that hour.

In the course of a month we became quite intimate; so much so, that when I came home, he would salute me very kindly—a compliment I was always ready to return, as I was proud of having some one to speak to. He began now to be rather too free, and would haul away my fish, without leave or license. At length this poor fowl became so docile, that I could do any thing with him. In an evening, as it grew dark, he would come in to roost himself; so that I began to pity him, and think his log unnecessary, and took it off. He knew his name, and would come when called Yellow-bill. Whenever I seated myself, he would come and place himself by me, and remain picking his feathers the whole time: this induced me to amuse myself often with talking to him.

One day as I was fishing, it came into my head to make a small voyage of discovery; and on my return home I began to put every thing in order, that I might carry it into execution without inconvenience, and particularly provided food for my bird. Accordingly, the next day, I got some roasted fish and water into my boat, lest I might not find any soon; I likewise put up my tinder tackling, and proceeded towards the

salina: there I left the canoe, and marched over a barren soil, producing nothing but palmettos, and prickly pears; then I walked away for a kind of grove at about a mile's distance. On my arrival, I found the shore grew rocky, and inclined more to the left, where it ended in a reef. Over these rocks I took my way, and saw before me a great bay of sand, the country full of large woods. Shortly after I came to a kind of inlet; and here I espied a large guano. This pleased me greatly, as I now hoped to find their haunts, which would give an agreeable variety to my diet, the flesh being very tender and good.

I went up the side of the creek for near a mile; saw thousands of fish in it, with the trees hanging over the water in many places, which rendered it difficult for me to pass on that way; therefore I took more into the woods, keeping the creek still in view. Here I saw many lime-trees full of fruit: these were most pleasing objects to my sight. I plucked one of them, and cut it: although the acid is extremely sharp, the taste was most grateful to me, and very refreshing.

Now I found the creek to change its course; and I began to fear I might lose myself, as I could no longer see the coast. I therefore concluded to seat myself, and take a short repast. Not far from this, on a rising ground, I sat down, and saw at its foot a small ripple of fresh water, with multitudes of land-crabs about it. Here I began my meal, which was enlivened by the various notes of innumerable birds of beautiful and diversified plumage. The concert was at once soothing and delightful to my ears.

In this place I observed a singular kind of bird, called the Old Man, from its having the feathers of its

crop of such a length, that when it perches it resembles the grey beard of an ancient person. I began now to consider with myself whether I should return or proceed: curiosity at length got the better, and I went up a small height, where it became very level, and full of brush, except here and there a bare place. I discovered, at a small distance from me, several manchiniel-trees, whose fruit is deadly poison to man: the very juice of its leaves will raise terrible blisters, so as to deprive a person of his sight. From beneath those trees, to my no small amusement, I beheld armies of land-crabs, marching off, on my appearance, with each an apple in his claw, and many of them had two, which made them droll figures; the more so, as they carried them upright. After this I walked on about one hundred yards, keeping a good observation of the sun. Here I was struck with a very remarkable appearance. On a plain place stood a huge rock-stone, almost upright, about the magnitude of a small church tower, and, as I judged, near forty feet in height, and almost square. When I came up to it, I found many scratches on it, made by some instrument or other, in the form of ovals, triangles, with rude imitations of heads, and the like. These I judged to be the works of Indians: however, as I walked round it, I found many letters, cut as with knives, which I supposed to have been done by Spaniards or pirates. Some few of them I took down for my own curiosity, and give them a place here; viz. M+A. P+V. JL. E+S. L+O. V+M. R::+C &c. &c. &c. I also found four dates, in different places, added to names, as thus—I + E 1589; Bal. S^s. 1605; A A. 1582, and W^m. R. 1673. In another place was to be seen the following characters: + To.  ⊕ cc. xx.

N. B. These letters having crosses between them, I attributed to the Spaniards ; the others I supposed to be the marks of buccaneers, or pirates, who had rambled over these parts in former times. I now began to think of returning home, and arrived at my small cove, where the boat lay, towards the evening, then put away along shore, and reached home just in the dusk, well pleased with my cruise. I found all safe as I left it, and was kindly received by my new comrade, who expressed great joy, raising his large wings, stretching forth his neck, making a soft and murmuring noise, and rubbing his head and beak against my bare legs.

The following night I had a very troublesome dream, occasioned, without doubt, by my excursion the day before. I thought I was sitting by the before-mentioned huge stone, when all at once, as from behind me, I heard divers voices ; and casting my eyes back, I beheld several men advancing towards me. The uncouth garb they were dressed in, made me start from my place ; they came on and hailed me thus, "Buenos dia, signior." They had whiskers, and wore armour. An old man asked me if I had seen any thing of Manuel Guiterez that way ; I answered, that I had not seen any mortal man since my first landing on this shore, except three or four Indians. They asked how long I had been there, and by what means I first arrived ; to all which I answered in good Spanish, as I then thought ; upon which they all seized me, and said, I was the King of Spain's prisoner, and must go with them to work in the mines as a slave. This, I suppose, gave my whole frame such a shock, that I awoke, hollaing in a most fearful way. My poor hawk was so frightened, that he flew into the water, and would most certainly have been drowned, had not

the sight of its distress brought me to my senses again. I ran to its relief, and then seated myself before the cave. While poor Yellow-bill was endeavouring to replace his plumage, I fell into a train of melancholy reflections, the consequences of my dream. I believed that the vision might one day be verified, and perhaps the time was not far distant. I had certainly grounds for this fear, as I knew it to be the practice of the Spaniards in this part of the world, and that many an Englishman had been thus served ; and many a maid, wife, and mother had lamented the death of a sweetheart, husband, or son, when perhaps they were, at the same time, in a much worse condition. My mind was so agitated with these thoughts, that it brought on a fever, which lasted three days. I then began to recover myself, and was resolved to consider it as a mere idle dream ; at the same time I determined to submit myself entirely to the will of God, and prayed for strength and fortitude to bear up against the evils incident to my forlorn situation, and to act, under all circumstances, as the duties of that situation should require.

Soon after this I went to my reckoning, and found, by the number of my shells, that I had been here above one year and four months. I never omitted casting in a shell every morning, (immediately after I turned out,) having provided a sufficient quantity for that purpose. I now came to the resolution of making a voyage westward, having nothing to hinder me ; my whole time being spent in a round of fishing, eating, drinking, and sleeping. I laid by a sufficient store of provision for Yellow-bill, and put off one fine morning, expecting to return the next day. I kept along shore for the space of two hours, and then began to

explore new scenes, the land running sometimes high, sometimes low, indented with fine sandy bays. At length I opened on a fine lagoon: I put into it, and proceeded for a good distance, the whole prospect about me being pleasant and inviting. As I turned round a low rocky point, I was suddenly struck with the sight of several human skulls, as I took them to be: they were white as snow. I put to shore, and went up to them, and found my conjectures right. I saw likewise that, in times long past, fires had been made there, as I found remains of ashes, and the ends of burnt sticks. This satisfied me that the place had been frequented, and, as I supposed, by a wretched race of cannibals. I took up two or three of the skulls, and put them in the canoe, and determined to get out of that place as soon as possible. I therefore put along shore, and spent much time in viewing places till the night came. I then landed. Not long after this, the clouds began to gather thick all round; the rain came on, with thunder and lightning. I hauled up my boat high and dry, and endeavoured to get under shelter myself; but the flashes were so frequent, and the thunder so terrible, that I thought one of the claps had separated the portion of the globe where I was stationed. I was so stunned by it, that I stood motionless for some time; and as soon as I could well recover myself, I ran down, and threw the skulls upon the beach, through a foolish and idle superstition that they were somehow connected with the storm which had happened. After this I walked about the shore till the day began to peep; when the clouds were dispersed, and the sun arose fair and clear. I had not a dry thread about me. My fire, tackling, and food, were all afloat in the boat. I began to spread out my clothes, and to bale my canoe. This

occupied me till the sun was about two hours high. Curiosity tempted me to take up one of the skulls ; and as I turned it round in my hand, I observed that it had no marks where the teeth should be. I began to examine another, and found the same defect. I concluded now, they could not be human, but that they were the skulls of loggerhead tortoises. Thus convinced, I got into my boat, and paddled away homewards, where I arrived safe ; but should have been miserably at a loss for fire, had I not been master of spare tinder in the cave, as all the other fire was quite extinguished.

After this frolic, I staid a long time at or near home, and employed my thoughts solely to make my life as easy as I possibly could. To confess the truth, till this time I had not felt that true contrition which my condition should have disposed me to a long time before. I now began to correct all my wandering thoughts ; to check my wanton and wilful cravings for the onions and garlick of my native shore ; and to thank a merciful God for the great deliverances I had experienced, and the comforts and conveniences that he had condescended to provide me with, even in this desolate situation. Reasoning thus with my own heart, I became quite resigned and easy.

Soon after this it came into my head to penetrate into the wood that was near my habitation ; but how to accomplish this was the business. I had neither axe nor any other cutting instrument to clear away impediments ; and to venture my knives would be too hazardous an experiment, and cutting against my own interest. However, at all events I was resolved to make the effort ; but I proceeded with the utmost caution, and therefore looked out for the most conve-

nient place to begin my incursion. I chose one about half a mile west of my dwelling, and a few days after made a beginning. In the first place I cut a large pole, which took up some time, as it was both hard and heavy: with this, when I had cut away with my knife, I beat down the bushes, so as to get about twenty yards into the wood. Here I met with a large yellow snake, and killed him with my pole: it measured full six feet in length, and ten inches round. This made me somewhat timid; and I began to find that I had undertaken a very arduous task, and was doubtful whether it might answer any good purpose. I had half a mind to give it up, when a sudden thought struck me, that I might succeed more effectually by using fire. Accordingly, waiting a favourable wind that would drive it from my dwelling, I took a load of dry bark, and set fire to it; it increased in a most rapid manner. I simply thought that it would only burn the low bushes, but, to my great surprise, in the space of an hour the blaze was tremendous, and the largest trees were on fire. I retired down to the shore, and began seriously to repent of what I had done. The fire became truly dreadful, and the continual crackling was like thunder in my ears. Thus it burnt for the whole day; but when night came on it was awful indeed.

I could not close my eyes in sleep; I was haunted with the idea that the wind might shift, which would bring it directly to my cave. However, towards the morning it became a dead calm; but the fire continued to burn more or less for seven or eight days. At last a glut of rain came on, and subdued the flames: nevertheless, volumes of smoke continued to ascend for above a week longer.

When I judged the earth might be tolerably cool, I began to take a survey of the desolation I had made, and to walk over this desert of ashes. The scene that presented itself was indeed extraordinary. Here and there stood the trunk and half-burnt limbs of a cedar or cotton-tree, with a variety of others of which I was ignorant. I came at last to the remains of a large plantain-tree, which gave me much vexation, as the creoles use the fruit as a substitute for bread. The only consolation I drew from my misfortune, was the knowledge that the true plaintain was to be met with in the neighbourhood.

I now began to turn my mind to the making of fishing lines, which I had learnt from an old Negro on board the schooner, in the following manner: to soak the leaves of the corritoo, or the aloe, and then to work them into fibres. This I found answer my purpose well, so that I had no longer any dread of wanting this article. I thus passed my days in continual employment of some kind or other; for, however idleness may be supportable in a state of society, in my solitary and forlorn condition it was perfect misery.

N. B. I was at this time very much incommoded by a troublesome companion, called the chigua; a small insect, which getting into the feet, there nestle and breed. They must be very carefully taken out with a needle, or the point of a knife. But my feet soon grew so callous, that I had no farther trouble with them.

CHAPTER V.

THIRD YEAR OF MY RESIDENCE.

By my account, I found that I had now exceeded two years by a few days. I did not examine my reckoning often, as it always brought on a train of melancholy reflections.

I must observe, that during the wet season I stirred but little from home, except to catch fish, as I could not well do without them. In all this long series of solitude, I never had the sight of one vessel moving on the face of the ocean; nor, since the Indians left me, had I once the opportunity of opening my lips to a fellow-creature of my own species; yet time had reconciled me to my condition, and notwithstanding the state of separation in which I lived, I had ceased to repine at my lot.

I must remark in this place an odd circumstance, which always happened after a slight shower of rain. It was this:—immediately as the rain ceased, I heard a noise, like that of a number of chickens; nor could I, with all my industry, discover from what cause it proceeded, unless it was made by the lizards; yet I have constantly kept my eyes fixed on them, and could discover no motion whatever which could occasion this noise, as coming from them. I am to this moment ignorant of the cause.

N. B. It is not unlikely that it proceeded from a kind of land-crab, called by the sailors and the West India fishermen, *fiddlers*.

I shall now give the reader an account how my household affairs stood, in regard to provision, and the various methods I had used at times to procure it. In the first place, I never wanted the three grand articles of fire, water, and fuel: fish never failed me. I had that kind of food in plenty, and of great variety; such as groupars, hinds, porgies, black and red snappers, grunts, rainbows, parrot-fish, coneys, gill-labours, doctor-fish, yellow tails, pork-fish, marget-fish, cuckold-fish, schoolmasters, tango, squirrel-fish, sucking-fish, and cray-fish. As for shark and barrow-cooters, I industriously avoided them, lest they should rob me of too many hooks, which I valued above pearls. Sometimes, indeed, I would venture with my lines made of corritoo. I then went into about three fathom water, perhaps about a mile from shore, for the sake of novelty: there I caught old-wife, hog-fish, or small jew-fish; nevertheless, a shark would get the better of me sometimes, and carry away a hook. Here it may not be amiss to relate an odd adventure, which happened to me while I was at this amusement. The day was very still; a flat calm. As I sat very composed at my line, hanging over the side of the canoe, all at once I heard a violent rushing, as of a cannon-shot through the air. I immediately fell flat to the bottom of the boat, and lay still for about a minute: when I raised my head, I saw a large bird, called a man-of-war, rising up from the surface of the water, with the garbage of a fish I had lately caught, in its talons. A short time before I had taken a groupar, who had gorged my hook; I opened him to recover it, and had thrown the guts overboard, and it had drifted away to some distance. This affair may seem trifling to many; yet to me, a lonely creature, it was truly alarming,

having never been disturbed by any noise louder than the cry of a poor bird.

As to fruit and vegetables, I never touched those I was a stranger to : sappodillos, guavas, limes, maumees, coco-plumbs, cassia fistula, sea-grapes, colliloo, &c. &c., I made use of as I found them. Flesh, except that of guanos, and a few birds out of nests, was what I seldom tasted. I found out a way to catch the ground doves. I took notice, that after my great fire in the wood, numbers came there to bask in the ashes: this gave me the hint to make fresh fires in bare places, among the ashes of which I laid snares, and by this means took many of them, which, when roasted, afforded me a delicious meal.

When I was one day hunting this game, chance brought me to the spot where lay a young fawn, about two or three days old. I was just going to take it up in my arms, to bear it home, when I considered that if I did so I had no way to feed it: I therefore determined to let it remain where I found it, and made it a visit every day to scrape its feet. I continued this attendance for near three weeks; I then got some corritoo twine, and belayed it to a stump. The old one came always in the night to suckle it, as I suppose, for I could never get a sight of her by day. When it was about five weeks old, I brought it home to my place, and made it fast among the low trees hard by. It soon became the tamest of creatures; and if at times I let it loose, it still attended me. It was a female, and I gave it the name of Miss Doe. It now fed anywhere round my dwelling, and became so familiar as to follow me like a dog. One day I took it into my head to make trial of her attachment. I first made her fast, then got my boat round to the beach, returned

and set her loose. She followed me to the sea-side. I then got into my boat ; she jumped in after me, gazing wildly round her. No sooner did I put off, and she felt the motion of the boat, than she sprung out in an instant to a good distance, and there fell to capering and jumping like a mad thing. After this I put along shore, and she stood with her head erect, gazing after me ; but on my whistling, she began to frisk it along the sands after me ; but I could not coax her into the canoe. I therefore put to and got out ; she immediately ran to me, reared up her fore-feet upon my shoulders, and then fell to licking my face.

I cannot describe how affecting this scene was to me ; it really made me shed tears of joy. I reflected on the goodness of Divine Providence, for thus throwing in my path this poor inoffensive animal, to be the comfort and amusement of my solitary and disconsolate hours. She soon became so used to the boat, that she would jump in the moment I took my seat, and would go with me any where.

About this time appeared on the coast a great number of whales. I saw them first in the morning, as I was sauntering along the shore. They remained in sight the whole day, blowing and playing about : on the Morrow they were still to be seen ; and as I was attentively watching them, I saw one of them raise its body above half out of the water ; at other times their tails came out very high, flashing about ; and thus they kept sporting and blowing for three days, and then went away to the southward.

To return to my household matters. In the turtle season, which was generally about June, July, and August, I fared sumptuously ; but found my body break out in large blotches, after eating this delicious

food for a long time together ; yet it had this effect, that I became more healthy afterwards. At times I cut the lean parts of them into narrow strips, and laid them in brine ; then hung them in the sun till they became hard and dry. These strips I sometimes boiled with some colliloo in a large shell. My fish I either roasted, boiled, or stewed ; but generally preferred the latter mode. I must observe, that I had one way, when I was particularly in haste, which was to cover up a fish, just out of the water, under the hot embers, where it remained about ten minutes ; I then took off the skin entire, opened the belly, took out the entrails, and thus obtained the true flavour of the fish, as the sooner they can be cooked the better.

I must not omit to mention, that by frequent boilings my shells grew crazy, which obliged me to look out for more. I took the greatest care of the few European articles I had by me. My head now ran on making baskets, and I resolved to make the trial. I chose out the most favourable twigs, but, to my great disappointment, found few that would answer my purpose. This put me on my old work of wattling again. I first made the bottom, then fixed uprights at the four corners, and wattled up between them ; thus I formed an ordinary kind of basket, which would hold about half a bushel.

Some time after, as I happened to be out in my boat, near to the Bird's Key, going over a very shoaly place, I saw a very large fish close alongside of the canoe : it was the first I had ever seen of the kind. I struck it on the head with my paddle, when it began to flounce about at a great rate. The water was so shallow that it had not depth enough to swim ; at last I saw it was endeavouring to get round, and thrust its

long saw over the gunwale of my boat, which startled me not a little. I immediately jumped out on the off side with my paddle, and began to lay about me manfully; but it got clear off, and struggled into deep water, and was soon out of sight. This fish seemed to be about ten feet in length. If I had had my graine with a line, I might have taken it with ease.

I shall in this place mention a circumstance which often gave me much uneasiness, not being entirely free from that wretched prejudice, imbibed by the generality of children, respecting apparitions, which is first implanted in their tender minds by the ignorant superstition of nurses, or perhaps the more criminal ignorance of their own parents. The fearful apprehensions arising from this weakness had never left me, but had gained strength in my travels, and was particularly increased by keeping so much company with sailors, who, of all other people, are the most superstitious. The circumstance which occasioned my present uneasiness was a noise which I often heard on moon-light nights: it was a kind of hollow treble tone, which seemed to utter "Yaoho! yaoho!" sometimes repeated three or four times together: this was answered by a similar sound at a distance. It was always heard to the westward of me in the high land. There was nothing particular in the noise itself, but what I might very naturally have accounted for: unfortunately, however, from an association of ideas, it had never failed to excite in me the greatest horror and dread imaginable; which I thus account for.

While I remained in Providence, I had frequent conversations with an old Negro man, a native of Jamaica, who, in his younger days, had been well acquainted with many of the Buccaneers, had sailed

with them, and knew their haunts. This man had received his pardon under the Queen's act of grace, and then followed piloting, or went out to hunt after wrecks about the coast.

This old man, whose name was William Bass, could write and read, and was well versed in the Scriptures ; he had been in England, France, Spain, and all over the coast of the Spanish Main ; yet was he superstitious to a very great degree. Among other stories, he related to me one concerning a sort of nocturnal animal, that walked upright as a man, and about the same size : it was black, and wonderfully swift of foot. It would suck the blood of the animals it caught, and leave them for dead. He observed also, that, by the track of the feet, one would be led to suppose their heels were placed foremost : the cry was similar to what I have related ; and he said that nothing but a bullet of silver could kill one of them.

At the time this story was first mentioned to me, it made but a slight impression, and I rather treated it with contempt ; but when, in my solitary situation, the same sounds were vibrating in my ears, I had the weakness to believe what I had before rejected, and became terrified with the idea of not only hearing, but being visited by these blood-thirsty animals ; and the more so, as the sounds were heard more distinctly, and seemed to come nearer than usual.

Thus time went on with me until the wet season was coming on, and I prepared to lay up a store of wood-brush, conches, &c. The latter I could keep by me for a long time, by making a small fence round them in the water, and by this means had my bait generally near at hand. About this time I had a frightful dream. I thought it was the wet season : the

whole country was overflowed, and I was obliged to quit my cave in my canoe. Like a second Noah, I wandered about for land, but could see only one small patch at a distance, for which I paddled with all my force. This exertion awakened me, and I was happy to find it no more than a dream. I little thought then it would be verified so soon after, at least in a degree.

The rains came on; and so great was the fall of water day by day, that it overflowed the lagoon quite up to the entrance of my dwelling. I was now forced to bestir myself with all diligence, hurrying away with all my poor articles to high-water mark, and securing them in the best manner I could. Here I was forced to remain quite exposed to the weather, for two days, when at length it abated. In my great hurry I had forgotten my poor bird; but Miss Doe stuck close by me. I now ventured to visit my cave, where I found the water had considerably subsided, and that, had I only retired into the back part with my things, all would have been safe. With great anxiety I began to search for poor Yellow-bill: at last I found him in a low bush, but quite dead, as he had been supplied with no food for three days, or more. I gave many a heavy sigh for the loss of my faithful and affectionate friend; but, alas! my grief was unavailing; it was indeed augmented, by something like a consciousness of neglect.

I now began to consider with myself, that fire and water were no otherwise friendly to man than under strict limitations: I resolved, therefore, to erect me a hurricane-house, to which I might remove on the shortest notice. As soon as I had removed my things back to my cave, I began this work, and made it in the form of an awning, close at one end, and a door at the

other, thatching it well with palmetto leaves. When I had completed this business, and began to be settled again, the loss of my poor bird weighed heavily on my spirits ; and had not my fawn supplied its place, I should have felt my solitude more dreadful than ever.

One day as I was fishing, I discovered a sail in the north-east quarter. She came away large, and in about an hour I could perceive it to be a small sloop ; but she kept a great offing, and stood away to the southward ; yet I kept my eyes on her as long as I could distinguish her, until she ran the horizon down. This sight, so new to me, introduced a train of melancholy reflections. I longed to be again with my fellow-men. It occasioned a painful retrospect of my past life. I looked back with regret, and forward almost without hope. There is, however, a principle in the human mind which will not suffer it to yield entire possession to despair : it will always suggest some alleviation to present misery ; some effort that may be made to render our condition better ; to throw off the superflux of wretchedness with which it is loaded ; and, with a pliancy suited to the occasion, will accommodate its powers to the trials to which we are exposed. I began to reflect, that most probably this sloop belonged to the Spaniards ; and, however forlorn my situation might be, a visit from them would certainly not improve it. The possibility of being sent to work in the mines, made my present condition comparatively a happy one. Subdued by these reflections, my discontents vanished, and I became reconciled to a mode of life which at least promised me liberty and security. From this time, nothing happened of sufficient consequence to be remembered, till I found by my reckoning that I had begun another year.

CHAPTER VI.

FOURTH YEAR OF MY RESIDENCE.

MY fourth year commenced with as little expectation of any relief as the former ones; but my mind was easier and better satisfied. I used frequently to make a party at hunting at this time. The reader may perhaps wonder how I brought this about. It was thus:—Early in the morning, I used to get every thing ready in my boat; and then, with my mate, Miss Doe, for whom I had made two small bags, to carry on her back any trifles I might want, I coasted along shore to the east lagoon. There I landed, and walked over land to the Tower-Field, as I called it. Here I used to unload my companion, and then light a fire. From thence we proceeded to a sandy plain, the constant resort of the guanos, and where they burrow in the ground like our rabbits. They run very swift; but now and then I got up with them, and, either by strength or stratagem, accomplished my purpose. When within reach, I used to knock them down with a short stick; but if they got so far the start of me as to gain their holes, I then made fire over their burrows, which never failed to fetch them out, and they became an easy prey. When I had often practised this sport, Miss Doe began to take a more active part in it; and when she perceived me in full chace of a guano, she would fly off, and be up with it in a trice: she would then often beat the creature dead with her fore-

feet. This new mode would have given much diversion to our English sportsmen, to see a man hunt with a deer instead of a dog.

I now began to consider, that the reason of my never seeing above one vessel during my stay here, was the knowledge that the coast was very dangerous and full of shoals, banks, and reefs; and that it might possibly be long ere I should see another. They who chanced to fall in with the land in the day-time, knew how necessary it was to keep a good offing, if possible.

A few days after I had made these conjectures, a large vessel hove in sight, standing to the northward: she was about four leagues out. The view of her renewed all my regrets; and when I parted sight with her, I could have laid me down and died. Time again worked my cure; and after a few weeks I returned to my usual tranquillity, and resolved, that whatever might happen I would repine no more. Such is the mind of man: we are but little capable of foreseeing or knowing what is most advantageous to us; we reason from human experience, which is often a fallible guide, and arrogate to ourselves the privilege of judging, without the possibility of knowing the consequences which may result from our decision. If things turn out as we wish, we congratulate ourselves on our sagacity and foresight; we take all the merit to ourselves, and never consider that there is an overruling Providence that directs and governs all events. I must confess, that I charge myself with this presumption. The eager and longing desire I had to be in the ship I had lately seen, might have proved my ruin: she might have been an enemy to my country, and have taken me into slavery for the remainder of my

life; or we might all have perished together in the ocean. Oh, my God! thy ways are inscrutable to feeble and short-sighted mortals: Thou directest us by means best suited to the ends of our being, and often turnest our greatest calamities into occasions of rejoicing! These reflections are fully justified by what soon followed.

According to my account, I had been on this shore about three years and two months. The wind blowing very fresh, I had not been abroad for several days: it still continued at south, with frequent rain and thunder-storms. When it became more settled, I resolved to make a trip over to the Bird-Island, after conches and welks. Accordingly I put off the next morning very early. I had not gone far out before I saw a canoe about a mile to the westward of my dwelling, and two people on shore. I directly put back, hoping they had not seen me, and hauled up my canoe: I then ran along shore, and got to a convenient place behind some trees. There appeared no more than two persons; one standing, the other sitting, near the canoe. Soon after I saw them retire up to the bushes: they came down again, and both looked into their canoe, then ran about the strand, making many odd motions, threw themselves on the ground, and acted like men bereft of their reason.

At length I determined to get nearer to them, as I knew there could not be many of them, by the size of their boat. I approached them so near, that I plainly perceived one to be a woman. Now they seemed to caress each other, then suddenly fell into the most extravagant antics, throwing the sand over their heads, and crying in the strangest way imaginable. I was quite at a loss to know what all this could mean. At

last I resolved to shew myself. I had nothing on at that time, but my bonnet, a rag round my waist, and my paddle in my hand; and thus I sallied down on the beach. They were at this time not sixty yards from me. No sooner did they get sight of me, than they ran among the bushes. I hallooed to them, but they never cast an eye back. I then walked up to the canoe, where I found a very aged man in her bottom, who to all appearance was at the point of death. I took him by the hand, but he did not open his eyes; whereupon I spoke loud, and he just lifted up his eyelids, and seemed to look on me. I then began again to call loudly to them: the lad shewed himself. I beckoned to him, but he did not move at first: at length, however, he came on a little, then stopped again. I continued to invite him, and he came nearer, till he was at length within a few paces of me: he then threw himself at my feet, taking one of them and placing it on his head, returned it, and did the same with the other. Upon this I lifted him up, patted him on his back, and took him by the hand. He stood before me as a person astonished and terrified. I smiled in his face, which gave him some courage; he then went to the canoe, and spoke to the old man, but he closed his eyes, and died away. I made signs to him to call the woman, which he did. She advanced in the same cautious manner, but gave still greater indications of fear: on my giving her all the signs of friendship in my power, she practised the same ceremonies as the lad; threw herself at my feet, placed them upon her head, &c. During this time the old man in the canoe gave a deep groan, and expired.

When I found the old man was actually dead, I made signs for them to get into their canoe, and to

paddle along shore, as I directed them; which they readily obeyed, and followed me, till we came to the spot where my boat lay. I launched her, and made signs for them to follow me still further; which they did, in profound silence, until we arrived at my cave. I landed, and invited them on shore in the most friendly manner. They began to cast their eyes round them, seemingly in great concern; and now and then looked sorrowfully at each other. I then produced some fish, and placed it before them; but they shook their heads, and declined it, and appeared to be very melancholy.

The reader will observe, that I had now a great deal of business upon my hands; first to provide for my new tenants, and then to bury the corpse of the old man. And it may not be amiss here, to give some sketch of their persons.

The girl seemed to be about the age of seventeen, and nearly five feet three inches in height: her complexion was nut brown, or rather a slighter tint; her eyes black, and the whites of them of a china cast, inclining to a blue; her nose and mouth small; her teeth white as snow, and even as dice; her neck and bosom of the finest form imaginable, and her arms and legs were finely proportioned; her hair was black as jet, parted before, and curiously tied behind, hanging down in plaitings, united together by strings of beads, of many colours, to a great length. Round her neck, arms, and legs, she wore three rows of teeth, belonging to the tiger, or some such animal; and round her loins ran a narrow piece of wove striped cotton.

The lad seemed to be about a year younger, but stronger built; his hair hung over his forehead and shoulders, as nature had disposed it, and in no small

quantity ; he had no other dress than a slight piece of striped cotton round his middle. As they were both of a height, and resembled each other much in features, I sometimes thought they might be twins.

The remainder of the day was spent in endeavouring to inspire them with confidence, and fix in their minds a good impression of me. They however continued silent and melancholy, which might proceed from their being so suddenly surprised by me ; or, perhaps, more particularly for the old man's death. Tears continually fell on the bosom of the girl, whenever she cast her eyes towards the canoe. The lad's trouble seemed to be of a more manly kind.

But as just now there was much to be done, I could spare but little time for condolence. I had a lodging to provide for the strangers, and the funeral of the old man to prepare. I took part of my own couch, and carried it to my tent, spread it the best I could, and then shewed them where to turn in to sleep for the night : they obeyed in a very condescending manner, and with expressions of gratitude.

I slept but little the whole night, and by the peep of day took my canoe and went to fishing. I returned in about two hours, and found them both sitting in their own canoe, weeping. I went up, and cheered them in the best manner I could, and then began to light my fire : this done, I fell to cooking as fast as possible, and having finished, invited them to partake of my meal. The lad came directly, but the girl declined it. I went to her, took her by the hand, led her to the table, and made her sit down. I then gave each of them a roasted fish : hunger now vanquished grief, and they both ate heartily, which pleased me much. After breakfast, I made signs to them to follow me to the

canoe. I took up the corpse by the head and shoulders, pointing for them to take up the legs: they did so, and we carried it to some distance and laid it down. I then began to dig a sort of grave with my paddle; which having finished, I made them help to lift it in. I now sat down to rest myself, and to observe what would be their behaviour on the occasion; but they seemed only to watch my motions. I therefore began to cover the corpse, and fill up the grave with sand, in which office the lad readily assisted me. When we had finished, the poor girl threw herself flat on the sand, and wept bitterly; and it was with some reluctance I could get them to follow me back to the cave.

I must here observe, that on the first appearance of my new guests, Miss Doe, from excessive bashfulness, had retired and hid herself; but the next day she again made her appearance; and when we carried the old man to his grave, she followed at a distance.

In two or three days, my new friends became more familiar, which convinced me they began to entertain a good opinion of me. They conversed more together. Nothing could be softer than the language from their mouths; but it seemed to me extremely difficult to attain, as they had a way of drawing in their words with the breath, and then uttered them as from the throat. I found the girl very modest and bashful, particularly when I looked at her: she would pretend not to observe me; yet every now and then I caught her viewing me from the corner of her eye, when she thought I was otherwise engaged.

In about seven or eight days we became quite sociable together; and I observed, when we were on the shore, they were continually pointing to the southward;

and sighs would often escape from the poor girl's bosom, while the lad would say a great deal to me. There was a difficulty which I very much wished to get over: this was to find out their names. I took notice, when they spoke to each other, there was a variation in certain words, but I could not particularly catch the term of address. To satisfy myself, I took the following method:—One day as the girl was washing some fish out of the canoe, and knowing the lad to be out of sight, I made signs to her to call him; but here I was completely foiled, for, standing up, she began to cry out in a small shrill voice, “Hoo, oo, oo, a hee,” and he came immediately. I bid him stir up the fire, as a pretence for calling him; but as we were afterwards sitting at our meal, I pointed to my breast, and said, “Penrose.” The lad understood me directly, and nodding his head, looked at his sister; then pointing to his own breast, said “Ayasharre, Ayasharre;” and directing his finger to the girl, said “Yalut-ta, Yalut-ta.” I believed I had succeeded, but was resolved to make another trial, to put the matter beyond a doubt. Accordingly, a short time after, I took an opportunity of calling “Ayasharre:” he came running and smiling to me immediately. After this, I took occasion to go into the cave, and called the girl, in the best manner I could: she came at once, and I gave her a shell, to bring me some water. I was now fully satisfied. I had so often occasion to repeat the lad's name, that I was resolved to shorten it; and as it bore so great a resemblance to Harry, from this time I gave him that name. I took the same method with the girl, and called her Luta.

Hitherto I had not meddled with any thing I saw in their canoe. I now went with Harry to examine

the contents. The first thing he took out was a yam, and ran with it immediately to the fire to roast it for me. I soon stopped and prevented him. It was too precious a jewel to me to be so disposed of. I soon made them understand that I would plant it in the ground. With that he ran to the canoe and brought up three more. My joy was so great on this occasion, I could hardly express it.

We now went to examine the remainder of their freight; and the following is a faithful account of the cargo, viz. :—

Two very neat paddles, bladed at each end. Two small harpoons, fixed with lines and staves. A bow, with several arrows, headed with sharp stones and sting-ray's bones. A small silver bell. Some half-roasted turtle. A few eggs. Part of a dead dog, or some animal resembling it, which stunk abominably. Several sorts of fruits and roots—part we used and part we planted. But what was of infinitely more value to me than the whole cargo, was a small hatchet, as good as new; on it was stamped the maker's name, Pedro Munoz, Cadiz, by which I found they had intercourse with the Spaniards.

It was with the greatest difficulty that I could keep my legs in this canoe; yet they had a small mast and a mat-sail, which they could ship and unship as they had occasion; and I afterwards saw four or more tall Indians stand and paddle in such a one with great dexterity, though I am persuaded the most expert of our seamen would not have been able to keep his balance in her.

I now began to teach them a few words; and the first which Harry caught was “come,” as he heard it so often repeated by me. The girl behaved with great reserve whenever I aimed to instruct her. But one day

as we were sitting together, the deer coming up to her, she said "Miss Doe," as plain as I could speak it myself. The method I pursued with them was this:—every morning I shewed them two or three objects, named them, and made them repeat after me. By this means I found they made a rapid progress. Harry would sometimes ask me the name of a thing he had forgotten, when the girl never failed to set him right. I found by this, though she did not speak so often as her brother, yet she retained what she heard much better in her memory.

These poor innocent young creatures became every day more dear to me. As much as was in their power, they would anticipate all my wishes. It was their delight to take directions from me, and to obey them with a ready cheerfulness, which convinced me of their regard. I used every method to conciliate their affection and esteem; but, at the same time, I so carried myself, that they should consider me as their superior.

Harry was so delighted with my method of striking fire, that he would ask me for my knife now and then, to try the experiment himself; and would even put the fire out for the purpose of lighting it again, so that I sometimes was obliged to refuse him.

It happened that one day I took Harry with me to view the burnt ruin I had made by setting fire to the wood. The girl perceiving my intentions, began to weep. I very much wished to know the cause. Upon this she threw her arms round her brother's neck, and whispered some words. Desiring to know the meaning of this, he was sadly put to it to make the necessary explanation, but began thus: "You go, me go, Yalutta not go—never come—dead—sick—die." I took her by the hand, and told her she should go too, as I could not

bear to see her unhappy. So off we went together, with Miss Doe in company. When we came to the spot, I was much surprised to find so great a change since I was last there. So many things had sprung up ; and even on the shrubs many blossoms were to be seen. I therefore determined to plant my yams in this spot. Miss Doe, perceiving so great a plain space before her, would often set off and race away to a great distance ; yet, immediately on my whistling, she would bound back again as swift as an arrow.

The next day I made them take the yams to the same place and plant them ; and from their increase we had a plentiful supply ever after. Some months passed on thus in the most perfect harmony, when an accident happened which perplexed me not a little. One day I went to examine my reckoning, and found that I had more shells than I ought to have. I could not conceive the meaning of this. I turned it much in my mind, but said nothing, resolving if possible to discover the cause. I must confess I had my suspicions, and soon found them confirmed. Two or three days after, I observed Harry bring in a few shells, and throw them in the basket before my face ; and, as it appeared, with perfect good-will, and with the intention to oblige me. Not finding it possible to explain to him the use I made of these shells, I told him there was more than enough, and turned it off with a laugh.

It now became necessary to invent some plan to reckon my time by ; and I determined on the following —to cut it on the trees with my knife ; and for that purpose I looked out a large cedar-tree, or rather fig-tree, whose bark resembles in texture that of our beech. On one of these trees I cut the date of my full time, as near as I could conjecture, by fifty days at a time. I

was just three years and two months, when I first found them, on my shore, and at this time they had been with me about four months; so that I fixed the period at three years and six months.

From this time, I continued to add by fifties; giving Harry a strict charge never to touch the marks, on pain of my great displeasure; and as he considered these characters as a kind of conjuration, he studiously avoided even touching the tree.

Having mentioned this fig-tree, I shall give the reader some account of its singular qualities. It resembles in no respect the tree of the same name with us in Europe. In its infant state, it grows perhaps to the height of nine or ten feet, at which time it becomes so weak as to want support.

N.B. This tree is always to be found within three or four feet of a stately cedar. When it has grown to about the height before mentioned, as if from instinct, it parts into two arms, bending towards the cedar-tree, which it clasps, or rather embraces closely, and by this means is prevented from falling to the ground. Having gained this support, it begins to climb, growing daily stouter and higher; and I have often observed, that when other trees intervene, it cautiously avoids them, and makes its way to the cedar in preference. It thus continues to increase in strength and magnitude, till it towers above the tops of the highest trees in the forest. At the same time its body, having the like kind of adhesive quality, extends itself in such a manner round the bark of the cedar, that it totally envelopes its kind benefactor, which is only here and there to be discovered. Indeed, in process of time, the whole external appearance becomes an ample fig-tree, as no part

of the cedar can be perceived. Of this fact I have seen many hundred instances.

I was accustomed to make a moral use of this spectacle. I considered my own tender and affectionate parent as the benevolent cedar, that yielded me nourishment and support when I was incapable of providing for my weakness; that, having attained size and strength to stand erect by myself, I had suffered her to wither and die away, as the sap from the cedar, and had elevated myself, by ungratefully contributing to extinguish the life and substance of my benefactress. But let me hope that I have made some atonement for my ingratitude, by the sincere contrition I have felt, and the troubles and mortifications I have since that day experienced.

One evening as Harry and I were walking on the shore, I chanced to hear the Yaoho's cry. Upon this I bid him to listen, and asked him what he knew concerning this noise, expecting to hear some strange odd story; but to my no small confusion, he laughed, and said, "That birry."—"What is birry?" said I.—"Bird," answered he, "go all nights, bite birds little;" then, clapping his hand to his mouth, made exactly the same noise. This was enough; I at once concluded it to be nothing more than an owl, or some such nocturnal bird; and called myself an owl or an ass, for swallowing the idle tales which had terrified me.

N. B. It must not be supposed that the events I have related happened in the exact chronological order in which I have given them, but in or near the time, as well as I can remember; not having the use of pen, ink, and paper, till the Dutch ship was lost many years after.

In order to divert the time, I used to play at quoits now and then with my messmate Harry ; and this he learned to such perfection as soon to be an overmatch for me. Often, when we were at this sport on the beach, Luta, as I called her, appeared to be much elated whenever I won the game. This I found never failed to occasion much snickering between her and Harry ; but as it always passed in their own language, they thought I paid no attention to it. Some time after this, as they were together with me in the cave, Harry came and stood before me, and said, "Where you come?" This I knew was meant to ask me from whence I came. I was at a loss how to give him, in language, the information he required ; so I pointed to the sea, and made signs that I had slept often during my voyage in a canoe, before I arrived at this shore. This I found made them very thoughtful, and the girl wept much. To pass it off as well as I could, I began to instruct them in words. Harry, observing me to be much pleased with his sister's pronunciation, leaped up at once on his feet, and taking Luta's hand, put it into mine ; then fell to shouting, hallooing, whooping, dancing, and making his obedience to us, after the manner I had learnt him ; and thus he went on like one frantic with joy. All this while the girl stood looking silently on the ground. I then made signs to Harry that I understood him well, and was pleased with his proposal. Indeed, it was impossible to have any objection, as she was a young creature of so charming a disposition, and so ready on all occasions to administer every kind office in her power. I then asked Luta if she was willing to be my wife, explaining by signs what I meant. Perhaps the reader may have no little curiosity to learn what answer she made me. It was

thus: "Penoly"—this was as near the sound of my name as they could catch—"Penoly no go," pointing to the sea; "Luta make fire all day." She then fell on her knees, and kissed my feet, then placed one of them on her head. Upon this, I lifted her up. When Harry saw this, he ran and clasped us both round, then began to dance, sing, and whoop, louder than before, uttering confusedly, and without order, all the English he knew. I plainly understood all this as the unfeigned expressions of his joy, and gave him the satisfaction of knowing that I was much gratified with it.

Our wedding was thus accomplished without much external form, but with as pure sentiments of love and affection as ever warmed two youthful hearts. Never did a young couple come together on more equal terms: our love, our interest, our fortune, our desires, and our intentions, were all one—that of becoming helpmates to each other; and I felt grateful to Providence for the blessing it had bestowed on me, in this faithful creature as my partner for life. Our vows were exchanged before Heaven, in a temple not made with hands; and I trust, though they were offered in the wilderness, they were accepted by that Being who delights in the happiness of his creatures.

This event took place just three years and seven months after my landing on the Spanish shore, or Main coast, as I learnt it afterwards to be, though at that time I supposed it to be an island. I now proposed to Harry that he should sleep in my bower, to which he readily consented; and I told him, whenever he could find out a wife for himself it would make me extremely happy.

Some time after this great affair was settled, my new brother and I went over to the Bird Island to procure

conches and eggs. When we came on the shoal, and had hauled up our boat near a clump of bushes, there seemed to be a great stir beneath them. On examination, we found a multitude of shell-fish, or rather amphibious gentry, called *soliers* or *soldiers*, from their red colour. As there is something singular in the nature of these creatures, I shall give a description of them, to the best of my knowledge and ability: viz. they are always to be found in shells of different kinds; but the welk is the largest they like to dwell in. The fore-part of this small animal resembles the lobster when boiled; the after-part within the shell is of so delicate a nature, that it will not bear the slightest injury. They either come out of, or go into the sea, to possess themselves of the shells; and what is remarkable, that, soldier-like, they have most warlike dispositions, and are continually fighting and committing hostilities on each other. In these contests, they often beat each other out of their tents, never failing to take advantage of an empty house, immediately on the other quitting it. As they grow larger, they shift from one shell to another. They are good eating, roasted on the coals, leaving the shell directly as the fire touches them. They pinch sharply with their claws when first caught. Having taken about half a peck of these soldiers, I walked towards a point where there were many pelicans, and some so young that they could not fly. I had been but a short time on this spot, when the old ones began to be very troublesome; taking a circuit round me, gliding on the wing, they would every now and then return, and give me such slaps on my head, that I was obliged to defend myself with my paddle as I retreated.

Having gathered a few eggs, I returned to the canoe,

where Harry shewed me a large fish called a ten-pounder, which he had struck with his dart. These fish are shaped like a mullet, exceeding swift of fin, but very bony. This gave me a specimen of my new brother's dexterity, as he struck it in its full career, as a good shotsman would a swallow on the wing. We now began to hunt for a few large shells ; and as we were at this work, Harry took up a trace of an odd kind of stuff, such as I had often kicked before me on the shore. He told me it was a parcel of young conches ; and on opening one of the parts, it proved to be so, there being more than forty young ones in the cells, all completely formed. This trace of stuff was at least two yards long, and must have contained some thousands, being joined close together, and in form like to the plant house-leek, of an odd texture, and in colour resembling sandy yellow.

This leads me to remark, that shell-fish, as they increase in age and magnitude, retire into still deeper water ; and this is the reason why we so seldom find the shells with the fish in them of a great size, though smaller ones are frequently found ; the others never coming into shoal water, but when worked up by tempestuous weather. In confirmation of this, as I was fishing in about ten fathom water, there came up with my hook a very large shell with the fish alive in it, of the helmet species. I had seen thousands of them before, along the shore, but not of one quarter the size of that I brought up, which weighed at least from ten to twelve pounds.

When we were about fifty yards from the shore, I discovered a small chicken turtle on the top of the water. I shewed it to Harry, who, snatching up his dart, bade me paddle slowly for it. I did so, and he struck it in

the back. The shaft dropped out, and away she towed us ; he tending the line, which was fastened to the head of the boat, till she grew tired. We then got her in ; she weighed about twenty pounds ; and we returned home and made a feast with it.

This adventure determined me to make a strong line for the purpose, which, by the assistance of my brother Harry, was soon completed ; and we often procured turtle in abundance. I now began to contrive how we should make a small turtle-crawl to confine a few of them as they were caught. This, with much labour, we accomplished to our satisfaction.

Finding that my companions began to understand English, so as fully to comprehend my meaning, I began to interrogate them about their country. I asked Luta, how far off was the place she came from ? She shook her head, and said, "About three sleep and three wakes," meaning about three days' journey ; but Harry said, "It was long more than four sleep, he was certain." I asked her then, who was the old man who died in the canoe ? She said, "He was her moder-fader, called Coduuno ; that their own moder was dead, and their fader put dead by the fighting-men ; that she and Harry lived with the old man ; that they had two broders and two sisters, who were married to men and women like she and I were." I then asked them if any white men came among them ? They said, "Not every day, but once in many sleeps ; she had never seen but three of them, and they were old men, and it was long ago ; once when she was so high," (holding her hands about three feet from the ground). I inquired what they did when they came ? "They brought crooked sticks with them," she said, "and made the women tell every thing." I then asked, if they did

not exchange things with them? "Yes, some small—all for good," she said, "but her people did not like to walk with them." "Why?" "Because," she said, "they kill all her old people long while ago, when the very old trees were small, as she heard old men say, but now much more grown every where;—her people had no way to get out from them, and they could not push them into the sea." I asked Harry, if their people did not eat men when they killed them in fight? He gave me a sneer, and spit on the ground; saying, "No! no! no! never! not eat! but that the old men said such things had been done when the moon was a little star."

I then inquired how they came to this shore. To this he made answer, that they came out to fish and catch turtle; but when they had been out two days, the old man had a fit, which, as I understood them, he was much subject to; that the wind came off the shore so strong that they could not regain it; and finding the old man grow worse and worse, they had at length gained my place, after being out nine days, drifting away with the current, quite out of their knowledge, having never been so far from home before.

"Should you be willing to go back?" said I.

On this they both eagerly cried, "Go! Yes,—go, you go—you go."

I told them that I would go when I could find the way thither; and then dropped the subject.

Thus things went on till my fourth year ran out.

CHAPTER VII.

FIFTH YEAR OF MY RESIDENCE.

ONE evening as we were all sitting together, I resumed the subject of their going back again. On this they both caressed me fondly, and said, "Yes, go—one, two, three." "No," said I, "if I should go, your people do not know me, and would have nothing to say to me; but there is your canoe, go when you please, and I can remain as you found me." This I said to try them.

Upon this a kind of sullen silence ensued; and I observed the tears fall from the girl's eyes. I took her in my arms, and told Harry to observe his sister. He then began to weep too, and said, "I never go, Penoly, 'out you and Luta." In the midst of this affecting scene, I felt something sting me on my thigh sharply. I immediately got up, and found a huge centipede under me. The pain in a short time became almost intolerable, and gave them so sudden an alarm, that fear became the predominant passion, and at once dissipated all their other apprehensions. Harry ran and killed the insect, and, pounding it with wet dirt, laid it on my thigh; and Luta bound it up after the best way she could. I then laid myself down—was in a fever for above an hour, with my head on the girl's lap, who was weeping over me in the most affectionate manner. I fell asleep. How long I lay, I know not; but when I awoke I was almost choked with thirst. They gave me some fish-soup; and by the morning I felt not the

least uneasiness. When I began to shew myself as usual, Luta said to me softly, " Me never go, Penoly no go—but Penoly go—Harry go—Luta go."

I had now begun to reflect with myself, that no true pleasure can be felt which occasions the slightest pain to others ; and as it was but a wanton kind of trial of their affections, I was properly served, and ought to be fully satisfied with the rebuke I had received, without trying upon them any more such painful experiments.

Harry was now my prime minister in all my undertakings. One day as he returned from gathering wood, he brought with him a large yellow snake. I had seen some of them before, as well as a small green sort, with another striped like a barber's pole, with black and yellow. I asked him what he would do with it ; " Eat it," he said. " Do so, then, if you can stand the poison." He cut off the head, skinned and gutted it, then laid it on the coals ; when it was done, he brought it to me to taste, but I declined it. I asked Luta, if she liked it : she said, " Yes, very good." When I saw them fall to with such appetite, I tasted it, and must confess that it was as tender as a chicken, and of a fine flavour. Another time he brought home a prodigious large calabash on his head. I was then in the cave, and Luta called me out to see it. It was the largest fruit production I had ever seen ; to speak within reason, it could not weigh less than eighty-and-twenty to thirty pounds. Harry cut it in two, and then began to scoop it out ; when it was thus made hollow, each part would at least contain a gallon of water. I laid the two parts by in the shade to harden ; it then became of great use to us, always standing in the cave, full of water, for our use and comfort.

Shortly after this, I determined to revisit the new

lagoon, where I found the turtle skulls; therefore I bade Harry get ready both canoes; and the next day we dressed a few fish, and filled one of the large shells or divisions of the calabash with water, and left the cave; Luta and myself in my canoe, Harry and Miss Doe in the other. We had no interruption in our passage, but arrived at the place of skulls with ease; then proceeded to a grove of mangroves, close on the water. Here we saw a great multitude of mullets, and other fish, with plenty of whistling-ducks, cranes, galdings, the bald eagles, fish-hawks, &c.; and being in greater numbers than I had seen before, they were a sure sign of much fish in the lagoon. There was a channel of about four or five feet deep all the way to the mouth of it; but at the entrance the water deepened to two fathoms in most places, till we came up it near half a mile, when it became shallower by degrees. The length of this lagoon is about a mile, or perhaps something more, with its entrance so shut in by a point, that at the distance of one hundred yards it is not perceptible. When we got to the head of it, we observed a large and spacious place, with a beautiful fall of water coming down from a cliff about forty feet high, with fine trees overhanging every part. This water made its course to the lagoon, down a fine lawn, mixed with patches of gravel, for the distance of about one hundred yards. Nothing could exceed the beauty of this scene; it formed a kind of semicircle, measuring, by computation, about a mile, every where environed by groves and thickets, except as you advance on the right, where you may walk among the trees to the summit, and have a complete view of the whole area, with the lagoon, woods, lawn, and sea in the distance.

I now told Harry to make fast both canoes, and we

then proceeded up the lawn together, quite to the waterfall. As we advanced, a large flock of parrots flew over our heads, making a strange outcry. On this we halted, it being the first time I had ever seen any of these birds wild. As I was thus gazing round me, I perceived at some distance an opening amongst the rocks ; thither we bent our course, and on a nearer view we found a passage between them, near to which was a cavern, with its entrance oblique to the lagoon, and, as it were, facing the fall of water, or rather the streamlet which came from the fall. I know not how to give an exact description of this place, unless I say, that it had the appearance of a high Gothic arch, about twenty feet perpendicular ; it was irregular, and near thirty feet wide, composed of a rugged kind of rock, and the floor fine gravel and small stones. I desired them to follow me, as I was resolved to explore it thoroughly. As we advanced, the echo was so great, that though we spoke low, our voices sounded tremendously. When we entered about five yards, I found the roof began to be more lofty than at the entrance ; and before we proceeded farther, I bade Harry return and gather some sticks, and kindle a fire. After he had done this, we made a farther entrance, with fire-brands in our hands. I now discovered many marks and letters cut on the rock on both sides the entrance, similar to those I had found cut on the tower-stone ; by this I found that others had been here before me. I did not think them worth the pains of copying, except in two instances, where the names were cut at length, viz. Martin Fletcher, and George Needham, 1670. We now took fresh brands, and advanced forwards. In a short distance, we found it contracted on all sides to about half the magnitude, and inclined much to the left ; we

should have been enveloped in total darkness, had we not used the lighted brands. We were now suddenly arrested by a strange noise within, which soon made us scamper back as fast as possible, and we were speedily followed by a set of harpies, as ugly and deformed as the most terrified imagination could have conceived ; these were no other than enormous bats, the ancient proprietors of the premises, who seemed resolved to defend their possession against all intruders. However, we were not so easily to be overcome. A thorough knowledge of the cause of our fear made us despise it. I bade Harry get fresh lights, resolved to make a further search. He readily complied, and I could scarcely refrain from laughter when I saw him return, running and whooping, with a legion of these nocturnal gentry before him, whirling the fire-brand round his head, crying, "Poo, poo, poo, poo," and laughing violently at the same time, till he hurried almost out of sight. I soon followed, and asked him if he had found the end : "Yes, yes," he said, "I put hand there too." "And how is it ?" I said. "Very dark, very little, short," he replied ; by which I knew he had been to the end of it.

Soon after this, Harry pointed and shewed me a very fine plantain-tree, and I presently saw two more. This so charmed me, that I turned short round to Luta, and asked her if she should like to live there. She said, "Yes, if I liked to come live too." Upon this, I came to a full resolution of moving without farther delay. I was so delighted with the place, that I never reflected on the obstacles which opposed our making it immediately our sole residence ; such as the distance from our yam-patch, and becoming quite land-locked from the sea, &c. This made me pause a little. On the other hand, I began to consider the advantages ; that

we should be quite safe from storms and inundations, the plantain-trees almost at our door, and that, by the hatchet, we could easily clear a way up to the cliff, where we could have a more extensive view of the sea, than from the simple beach. These and other reasons turned the scales, and I resolved at once to put the scheme in execution.

Here we spent the remainder of the day, and prepared to sleep within the great entrance that night, with three fires burning before us. This we accomplished without any other disturbance, than now and then a bat would fly in and awaken us with the noise of his wings. At the break of day we set off, and arrived at our old habitation in good order, and found every thing safe at home as we had left it.

My mind now began to run strongly on my new situation, and I communicated all my thoughts to Harry. Upon the whole he approved of my plan, but started some objections, which had not occurred to me: viz. the great distance from our turtle-crawl, the guano ground, and the little probability there would be of finding drift-wood. In all other respects he joined with me in giving the preference to this place, as contributing much more to our comforts; and I determined to remove as soon as possible. In regard to the guano ground and plantation it might be somewhat inconvenient for the present; but when we were settled, we would plant nearer home, and make a new crawl for our turtle in the most convenient place we could find. So far we all agreed.

Having fixed the day for leaving the cave, we accordingly began to make our preparations. One morning as Harry was out after drift-wood on the shore, he spied a canoe, and came running to us almost out of

breath, crying, "Boat, boat, canoe-boat!" Away I ran with him, Luta, in a great fright, following us, not knowing what had passed. When we came on the beach, I saw a canoe standing right in for our shore, and about a mile off. There were three savages in her, standing quite erect, with their paddles, intending, as I supposed, to land about half a mile below us. We all three retired into the bushes. What step we should take in this critical moment, was yet to be determined. I began to observe my companions, and found that both Harry and Luta seemed very uneasy, though they had been so much for my going with them before. I encouraged them in the best manner I could; and thus we watched the landing of the savages. They soon came to shore, hauled up their boat, and one of them pointed directly to our cave. They began their march towards us. I therefore concluded they had either seen us, or our smoke, and was resolved to meet them boldly. When they came within two hundred yards of us, I bade Harry go down on the beach; then took Luta by the hand, and followed, she trembling with fear. We were in a manner as naked as those we were going to meet, except that I had a pair of striped trowsers on, and my bonnet on my head. The instant they perceived us they stopped short; I then hailed them; they answered me. To shew that I was in no kind of fear, I advanced boldly up to them: one of them called out, "Espania?" I answered, "No; Englese." On this, they all said, "Signor Capitano, bon, bon." I had taken the precaution of calling myself an Englishman, from what I had learnt from Harry and his sister of the disposition of their countrymen towards our nation. I then made signs for them to follow me.

When I found them inclined to be friendly, I told

Harry to try if he could understand them. But how was I surprised when I saw him fly up to one of them in a transport of joy, and call him by name! They all three at once got about him. I shall not pretend to give a description of their expressions of ecstasy on recognising him—it is out of my power. Harry pointed to his sister. I had no occasion to apply to her for an explanation of this. It was the language of the heart: it spoke intelligibly to all our feelings. They were of the same nation—probably of the same kindred; and I could perceive, during the conference, that they looked with confidence and esteem on me.

I could hold out no longer. I joined them; when Luta, throwing her arm round my shoulder, gave them to understand that I was her husband. They all three saluted me kindly in their way; at the same time, examining my person, remarked, that I was larger than they; for they were light small men, but well proportioned. I was anxious to obtain more information, and told Harry to invite them home with us. They expressed the greatest wonder and amazement when they heard Harry and Luta talk English to me. They would often lift their hands over their heads, crying, “O wah, wah he!”

I then inquired of Harry who they were. He told me the elderly man was Komaloot, his sister's husband's brother; the tallest of the other two was Futee; the third he did not know.

This intelligence gave me much pleasure. We soon arrived at the cave. I now bade Harry and his sister sit down with them, and talk over every thing. Luta soon became very talkative. I found the subject was their being driven in the canoe, and arriving at this shore. I then desired Harry to prepare a mess for

them; which he flew to perform immediately. I remarked one thing very peculiar in these people,—that they shewed their teeth much, very rarely closing their lips in conversation.

I now wanted to learn whether accident or design brought them to this shore. Luta made the inquiry; and gave me the following answer:—That there had been a great canoe lost lately, and that her friends had been out in the great water to it for what they could find. I bid her ask if any of the people were saved. They said, no; but they found four dead men. I then inquired whether they were English or Spaniards: they replied the latter, by their clothes and little wooden crosses about their necks—saying they knew the English threw such things away, unless they were made of gold or silver, as the English did not use wooden gods, thinking them of no value. This made me smile upon Luta; and she said something that made them all laugh. I inquired what it was. She very ingenuously told me, that she had informed them I had no god at all that she ever saw. I asked her how she could tell that. Her answer at once closed my mouth, and penetrated to my heart—“If I had one, I had never shewn him to her.” I felt convicted of ingratitude to my Maker and Preserver, and of injustice towards her, to have so long left her mind in complete ignorance, and thus to have deprived her of the comforts and consolation of religion.

To return to my narrative. I asked Luta what they said concerning her and her brother being missing in the canoe, which drifted to this shore. She said, they informed her that her friends had been all along the coast in search of them, but had given them up long ago, thinking that they had either perished at sea,

or that some vessel had taken them up and carried them away ; that the old man's wife was dead ; also one of her sisters, called Niuxa.

When she repeated the names, I saw her eyes fill with tears.

One of the Indians asked, whether I was not afraid to live there on account of the rainy season ? I bid her tell him, that I was going to remove to a more convenient situation ; and that I would shew it to them before they returned home, if they would stay a day or two. They told Harry they would ; and were going to make a small hut to sleep in while they remained with us. We then made a good meal of such things as we could set before them. After they had done, Harry and one of them went to bring round their canoe. When it came I observed they had collected several things out of the wreck, by which I knew it to be a Spaniard.

There were three pair of undressed leather shoes. Two small brass kettles. A large roll of sailcloth. Some woollen frocks and trowsers. A good firelock ; but no powder or shot. A great number of spikes and small nails. Some knives without springs, like our clasp-knives, but open, with a stopper behind. About twenty balls of twine. Six hatchets. Some chisels. Three saws—with plenty of fish-hooks, and a pair of shark-hooks. A dozen of fish-grainges, tied together, quite new. Two felt-hats, and above a dozen new ones made of straw. A bag of fine Lima beans. Four hammers, and one mallet.

But there was one thing which gave me much concern—a bloody shirt. On sight of this, I began to suspect their honesty ; and that possibly they had procured these things by violence and murder. However, with-

out further knowledge, it would be unfair to conclude them guilty ; and to entertain such an opinion of them would be a perpetual source of uneasiness.

I was resolved not to meddle with their booty ; and whether any thing was concealed beneath what I had seen, I knew not.

Mr. Harry I found very inquisitive and busy in examining their whole cargo ; but I checked him, lest they might be displeased and leave us in a pet ; which would have given me much concern.

CHAPTER VIII.

I HAD been on this shore about four years and three months when these Indians arrived. They now began to cut down stuff for erecting a temporary hut for themselves. Harry and I assisted them, with which they were much pleased. They inquired particularly how I was first cast on this shore ; and as I found they had got some knowledge of it from Luta, I bid her tell them the whole.

In about three hours the hut was finished, close to that of Harry ; and they prepared to rest for the night. On the morrow I proposed that Harry and two of the Indians should go out to strike some fish, viz., Futatee and the other, keeping Komaloot with the girl and me. They returned with some fine fish, which I ordered to be cooked for our voyage.

The next morning we all put off, and had a pleasant trip of it. When we arrived at the spot, they all

agreed that it would suit much better than the old habitation, but that I must expect to be troubled now and then with the tigers and wood-cats ; that Harry must likewise keep a good look-out after the piccaries and warrees, or they would devour all our yams, and other things.

This was a new and perhaps a useful piece of information, as I had never once thought of any thing of the kind, having never seen any in all the time I had been there. I was nevertheless determined to settle on that spot ; and I observed to them, that I had never seen any tigers whilst I lived at the cave. They said, that was very likely ; as those creatures never frequent low mangrove grounds, being much disturbed at the noise of the sea, and finding little game in such quarters. But if they should chance to make us a visit, we had only to show them some fire, and they would soon run off ; and that even smoke continued for a time seldom failed to make them quit that quarter. Then pointing to Miss Doe, they observed, that she would be apt to draw them about us. I was so prepossessed in favour of the place, that I was resolved to run all risks.

We now took a general view of the place, while Harry prepared the fish for dinner. Having finished our meal, we all got into our canoes, and returned to our old habitation again. On the morrow I proposed to look out for some turtle. Our party consisted of Futee, his companion, Harry and myself, leaving Komaloot at home with Luta. We followed our sport for two days, in which time we took no more than six turtles. Three of them I reserved for ourselves, and placed them in the crawl ; the others they roasted, after their slovenly manner on the coals, for their use as they returned home to their friends.

They now began to think of departing. I put Luta upon begging from them a few of the articles out of their canoe, which would be of great use to us, promising, at the same time, that we should be always ready to lend any of their countrymen that should land on our shore, all the assistance in our power. Upon this they held a council together ; then asked what we desired, and they would be ready to make an exchange with us. I desired her to inform them, that as to offering them any thing in exchange, they must see it was not in our power. Komaloot then took me to the canoe, and asked Harry what I wanted. I pointed to the hatchets, kettles, twine, &c. ; but what I seemed most to wish for, were the very things they were least willing to part with. He then took up a pair of shoes, and offered me them. I gave him to understand that they were of no use to me, I was become an Indian like themselves, and that my wants must be similar to theirs. This produced a fresh consultation. At last Futee and Komaloot spoke a great deal to Luta, which she thus explained to me : that they advised us to go and reside among them ; they would answer for it we should be treated with kindness, as I had been so good to Luta and Harry. I began to suspect this was only an evasion, to excuse them for not parting with any of their cargo to supply our necessities. I therefore desired her to inform them, that I was fearful, if I accepted of their offer, that I might through ignorance of their customs give them some cause of offence ; and of all other things I wished to avoid the Spaniards ; so it was best that I should remain where I was. That I should always be glad to see any of them at my poor habitation, which, by removing to the other place, would now be made much more

convenient; but if Harry had the least inclination to return with them to see his friends, I would by no means wish to detain him. His sister, I believed, had no such wish to leave me, as we lived together in great love and harmony. Upon this they observed they had no room for Harry, whatever his inclination might be, as their canoe was too full. Luta then retorted on them sharply, that having so much, they would not part with any thing to her. This occasioned a loud laugh, and a great deal of jabbering among themselves; after which they took her by the hand, and led her to the canoe, to shew them what she wanted. She pointed to one of the kettles. They gave it to her. Then they asked me what I chose. I told them Harry wanted an axe. They gave him one. I observed they had many knives, and we wanted some. They gave us three, with some of the twine. I asked for a few of the Lima beans, to plant. They offered me as many as I would have; and finding them in a complying humour, I hinted that sail-cloth would be very useful to us. We had this also. But it was with the greatest difficulty they would spare us a few spikes and nails, as they valued them more than any part of the cargo. They readily gave us three of the sanebraros, or straw-hats. I now thought a little flattery might be useful; and intimated, by means of Luta, that I had taken a particular fancy to Komaloot. The bait took, and I was presented with a shark-hook, and two of the new fish-gigs. These I valued greatly. They likewise gave me a hammer and a saw, with a parcel of the small fish-hooks.

The next day they prepared to leave us; but when Harry found this, he took Luta aside, and desired that she would intreat them to procure him a wife. This caused much mirth; but as Luta and I joined seriously

in the petition, they said, when they got home they would advise with their people about it, and endeavour to comply with our wishes ; and observed, that if they should return to us again, they should come in canoes, as they had never been at our place by land.

They now took their leave in a very friendly manner. We accompanied them to the beach, saw them set off, and remained near an hour watching them. It was wonderful to see with what expedition they paddled away ; yet the canoe was so full, that I should have been afraid to have trusted a favourite dog in her, unless it was to go along shore, where he could swim for his life. While they remained with us, I tried by every possible means to learn what part of the coast I was upon, but could not succeed. I found that I was on the continent, and not an island, as I supposed. They would sometimes mention Carthagena, and a few other places. They told me no Indians lived within four days' journey of me, but that there were a great many to the northward, with whom they never talked or walked. When we returned back to the cave, I was surprised to find the shoes and gun among the mangroves, but supposed they had forgotten them. I observed, that for two or three days after their departure, Luta and Harry were quite dull, and out of spirits. As I went into the cave, I was greatly surprised to see on a ledge three dollars. I called Luta to inquire about it. She told me they had it out of the canoe, from under the sailcloth, and that they had as many as would fill the wooden bowl. These were of little value ; an equal number of nails would have been infinitely more precious to me.

The next business I took in hand was, I must confess, somewhat out of my line ; but my fair country-women will, I am sure, excuse this exercise of my in-

genuity, when they know to what purpose it was applied. It was no less than to make my lady a petticoat out of the fragment of sailcloth the Indians had left me, by the help of a sail-needle and a little twine. I completed this garment in a very workmanlike manner, and shewed her how to put it on. She was so highly pleased with it, when I told her my country-people wore the same, that for two or three days she did nothing but admire it as she walked along, and put herself into such strange attitudes to shew it off, that it created me much diversion. It was somewhat of the shortest, I must confess, which gave her a more comic appearance, as it did not reach above a foot below her waist; but necessity will sometimes impose strange variations in the costume of female habiliments, which are not otherwise to be accounted for. I can offer no apology for the scantiness of my wife's petticoat, but the obligation I was under of complying with the old proverb, of "cutting my coat according to my cloth."

It now came into my head to add a still greater polish to her manners, by teaching her how to make a courtesy, and Harry to make a bow. My lessons, I must confess, were not in the first style of elegance, but they were copied in a manner so truly diverting, as to afford me great entertainment; and whenever Luta observed me to be more thoughtful than usual, she would every now and then drop me a courtesy, till she forced me to smile.

I now determined, by means of my tools, to fit my canoe for sailing. I cut the old boat's rudder, and made a thwart to fix a-midships, prepared me a small mast suited to my canvas, and when my sail was made, I cut a sprit for it. All being ready, I took a short

trip in her with Harry and his sister, and found her work well. The next thing was to examine her bottom, and for this purpose we got her capsized on the beach. Harry and I now began to peg up all the worm-holes, then covered her over with a large quantity of boughs, to keep her from rending, while we went in quest of a shark or two. Accordingly we went the next day in the small canoe, but were a long time before we met with success ; at last we hooked a shark, killed him, and brought him home. We prepared his liver in our brass kettle, and then payed the boat's bottom with it. Some of the oil we used to burn at times in a shell ; but we found they soon cracked, and became useless. Harry having discovered a sort of wood which burnt like a flambeau, this suited our purpose better.

Being now on the remove, I resolved to examine my reckoning, and mark it down. I found my account stand, at my leaving the cave, at four years and six months. We contrived to convey our moveables thus :—Harry took charge of Miss Doe, and a few other things ; the rest I stowed in my large canoe, accompanied by Luta. I bade him paddle away a-head, as I had a large wind ; but I soon fore-reached him, and arrived first, landed my lady, and waited for him. He followed me in about half an hour. We then carried up all our furniture to the castle, the name I gave to our new habitation. Having arranged every thing in a proper manner, Harry and I set off to strike some fish, at which sport he was very skilful. It was not long before he struck a fine snook-fish, sufficient to serve us for two meals. When the evening came on, we made three large fires, before the entrance of our castle, as a guard against the tigers : when this was done, we got a few

palmetto leaves out of my canoe, and made our beds for the night: but we had little sleep; our minds were in some degree agitated with our removal; every thing was new and strange to us, and we were not entirely without apprehensions, though our fears had no particular object. Nothing disturbed us during the night, except that a bat or two now and then flew out and in.

Early in the morning, Harry and I went down to the lagoon, and cut away into the mangroves, leaving a good shade overhead. Here we docked our two canoes. The rest of the day we employed in putting all our matters in more exact order: but it was more than a week before I could at all reconcile myself to my new habitation. My mind was still haunted with frightful ideas of wild beasts; but my two companions were visited by no such fears, and slept soundly.

The first piece of work we entered upon, was to make a stool for each of us to sit on, and a new table. For these purposes, I ordered Harry to fell a few small trees, such as we could conveniently manage. I undertook to cut them in lengths, and saw them through. It cost me much labour before this work was finished, and rough enough they were when made; but they served as well as more costly furniture, for the use we applied them to.

I chose the inner part of the cavern for our bed-chamber, and made fire in it to expel the damps, and drive out the bats; the outer part was for Harry, somewhat apart from us, and out of our view: in his station, he was our guard from any sudden surprise. Thus we continued for two months, without the slightest interruption. I began not only to be reconciled, but charmed with our dwelling.

One afternoon we were suddenly alarmed by a most unusual noise. Harry ran out, but soon came back, calling out loudly for assistance. No sooner did I get out, than I saw poor Miss Doe flying home with a tiger-cat sticking fast between her shoulders. I was much enraged, and snatched up one of the hatchets: Harry followed me; we were soon up with the animal, and I dispatched it with a single blow. The poor deer was so mangled, that I saw it was impossible for her to live; I was therefore under the necessity of killing her. I cannot describe how painful this office was to me, but I considered it as an act of mercy. Poor Harry could not tell what to make of it; he seemed to look at me with surprise mingled with horror; but I soon convinced him, by shewing him the dreadful state of the poor creature, that it was impossible for it to live, and the short time it could exist must be passed in extreme misery. Thus I lost my faithful, my sportive companion.

The event had scarcely happened, when I began to wonder at my ferocity. I repented for what I had done, though my reason convinced me I had not acted improperly. It was the sudden impulse of humanity, to relieve a suffering animal from a state of torment. For the moment it became a matter of feeling only. I felt as if I had committed a crime, and wept bitterly. All this time Luta kept at a distance. Harry took some pains to explain the transaction to her. Since the matter was so decided, we thought it necessary to skin the poor animal. During this operation, Luta continued weeping: indeed, we were all three greatly affected at the loss of this affectionate and diverting creature, and mournfully viewed her remains, with regret and sorrow at our hearts.

Some time after, Luta observed to me, that this was a most unlucky beginning: she wished she had remained at the old cave. I endeavoured to laugh her out of this most foolish prejudice, and assured her, that we were equally under the protection of Providence here as at the other place; that we had no dangers to apprehend but what we were able to provide against. Notwithstanding all my reasoning with her, I was very uneasy at having such troublesome and dangerous neighbours, and made it a rule to light up a large fire twice a week; which answered our purpose completely, as it was some years before we saw any more of them: and wherever we went, Luta always accompanied us, to prevent the possibility of an accident.

After we had been here for a considerable time, we went one day along-shore to the southward of our lagoon. We found the water very shallow, with a small current setting north. As we were paddling on, I spied a long range of a small kind of red rushes in the water, as I supposed them to be; but, on further examination, found them to be the horns of multitudes of cray-fish. We pushed our canoe amongst them; and grasping a handful of their horns, threw them into the boat. Indeed we could have loaded her with them if we had been disposed, for they were by no means shy.

These cray-fish are of a light freestone colour, spotted with black and yellow; and some of them do not weigh less than four pounds; of which sort Harry struck several afterwards.

The discovery of these fish was a very important service to us, as it provided us with a variety of food; and we returned home joyfully with our cargo. The

poor deer's skin Harry dressed in the Indian fashion ; and it served me for a jacket, with the hairy side outward, without sleeves, as I was not tailor enough to complete that part of the work ; but, upon the whole, I acquitted myself tolerably. I was not a little proud of it, as it spared the few clothes I had left ; and going naked, though I was so much accustomed to it, was attended with one inconvenience which was extremely troublesome. This was occasioned by an insect called the doctor-fly, about the size of our common hive-bee, and shaped somewhat similar, but its head is of a bright Saxon green. No sooner do they find out an object that suits them, than they dart at it, and instantly make the blood fly out, like the touch of a lancet.

By this time Mrs. Penrose was far advanced in the way of increasing our family ; on which account I took more than ordinary care of her. Harry was so proud of it, that he was continually talking to me on the subject ; asking me what name I would give the child, &c. &c.

We now began to clear a good road up the hill with our hatchets, that we might the better come at the top of the cliff over the entrance of our castle. This we did by spells—a day now and then—until my reckoning proved that I had now been another year complete on this island.

CHAPTER IX.

SIXTH YEAR OF MY RESIDENCE.

AFTER we had cleared round the top of the cliff, we could survey the whole coast far and wide, and could plainly perceive the great danger ships of burthen would be in, if they approached it too near ; as there was nothing but rock, sand-banks, reefs, and currents, with eddies and breakers, to be seen along the whole coast. It was, therefore, no wonder I saw so few vessels.

One day I took occasion to ask Harry if he could tell me what his name meant in English ? This puzzled him not a little ; but after conversing some time with his sister, they agreed that Ayasharry signified a swift runner, or a light-footed person. I then bid him translate Luta's name, and they said it signified green grove —that Komaloot meant a finder or searcher, and Futee a bald eagle. Codu-uno, the name of the old man who died in the boat, signified a man of great strength.

One day as I ascended the hill to look out as customary, I thought I discovered something like boats, off a point to the southward. On this the spy-glass, for the first time, came into my head ; so I returned for it. Harry was at this time gone a-fishing ; but returning soon, we went up together, and found that, as I suspected, they were boats or canoes. Harry began to whoop and dance for joy ; he said Komaloot was coming with three canoes. I found on this, as on many other

occasions, that the Indians can see distinctly at a much greater distance than Europeans. However, in this instance, his joy had made him exaggerate ; as by the help of my glass, I could see plainly there were but two canoes. I laughed at him on this, and observed, that one canoe was large enough to bring him a wife. This made him shake his head, saying, he believed they would not do him that service, now his father, mother, and old Codu-uno, were dead.

We now saw them come round the end of Long Key, and put right away for our dwelling. I could count eight people. We all three got into my canoe, and went down the lagoon to meet them. As soon as we got out, we made up a fire. This they saw ; and when they came within hail, we gave a good shout—they answered us. I bade Harry and Luta dance with me, to shew them how glad we were to see them.

The first man who jumped out was Komaloot. He ran to meet me, and I him. After embracing, he said, Yalut-ta ? I pointed to the fire where she stood. He then ran and took her in his arms—shook hands with and hugged Harry. By this time they were all landed. A fine scene now presented itself to me.

Nature, undisguised nature, began to display her full powers. They all ran together in a cluster, fell to weeping, laughing, hugging, and even went so far as to bite each other. One of the men threw out of the boat some arms, and then fell to dancing. This I knew betokened friendship ; and I kept dancing and singing at such a rate, that had any of my own countrymen seen me, they would have thought me as much a savage as the rest ; but I knew it to be my interest, as a stranger among them, to shew these demonstrations of joy at seeing them, and bidding them welcome.

My visitors were as follow: Komaloot and his brother, called Vatte-queba, (this person was the husband of Luta's sister,) his wife Lama-atty, Owa-gamy, (this man seemed to be of some authority among them,) Futatee, who visited us before, Dama-santo, and Zula-wana ; and lastly, Cara-wouma, with a little boy in her arms, aged about two years, called Quea-ruva.

We all embarked again for our castle, and arrived soon after. When they were landed, I made signs of the great joy their presence gave me, and then led them to our dwelling. I bid Harry to desire Komaloot to place them before me according to their dignity. When he was made to understand this, he took Owa-gamy by the hand, and seated him frst. I desired him to bring me a few flat stones, which he did. I took one, and with the point of my knife scratched his name on it. I then asked him what it was in English! He said it was a traveller. This I wrote beneath it, and laid the stone in Luta's lap. The next that came was Zula-wana. They told me his name meant a good canoe-man. I put down this likewise, and delivered the stone as before. Then came Vatte-queba, or the excellent fisherman ; Futatee, the bald eagle ; Lama-atty, or transparent water ; Cara-wouma, or beloved darling ; and lastly, the boy Quea-ruva, or the counsellor. During the whole of this ceremony, they all sat in solemn silence, with their eyes fixed steadily on me ; but as soon as I had concluded, Owa-gamy inquired the reason of all this. Harry told him it was for the purpose of learning their names, and fixing them in my memory. With this they were all very much pleased ; and Owa-gamy, pointing to each, repeated their names again.

After this Komaloot took the young woman Cara-

wouma by the hand, and began a long oration to me, now and then turning to Owa-gamy and the rest, as if for their assent or approbation. They all answered in one tone, like an amen in the church. When he had finished, he sat down, leaving the girl standing. During the whole of this, Harry was smiling, and looking at his sisters, they nodding their heads in return, so that I soon began to comprehend the business. I then desired Luta to explain the whole to me in English in the best manner she could ; which she did thus : “ Komaloot says, when he went back to our people, he told them that they had seen my brother and me. No more dead. One white lost man, who had heart as big as great friend, had lifted up our lives again, and covered over the bones of good old man Co-du-uno ; that Penoly had made one of three people, so that all agreed I was a great-hearted man ; and for that reason, Owa-gamy came with them to drink clear water with me ; and, out of the great love they bore to Ayasharry, they had brought him Cara-wouma for a wife, she being willing, when she heard he was come alive again.” When she had finished, I took the girl by the hand, led her to Harry, and made them join hands in presence of the whole company. They all gave a great shout of approbation, and thus ended the ceremony.

I now began to think it high time to regale my visitors, but first desired Luta to inform them, that their coming so early in the day, prevented our giving them such an entertainment as we wished ; but if they would help my brother Harry in catching a few fish, we would cook them with the greatest expedition. Two of them immediately offered to accompany Harry, and I desired him to take them among the cray-fish.

During their absence, Luta took her friends to shew

them all the beauties of the place, and explained to them our manner of living, and sleeping, &c. Owa-gamy observed many things to her, in regard to our future happiness, which she interpreted to me, and bid me remember to get some fresh water to drink with the men, as it was always their custom with friends. I desired her to get me a calabash, and then went to the stream, and dipped it full, took Owa-gamy by the hand, and drank to him. This pleased him much, and he received it from me, and drank also. No sooner had this ceremony passed round, than they all began to sing, dance, and laugh with me, in a more free manner than hitherto.

The canoes soon returned with plenty of fish, which were speedily cooked. Then all sat down, and made a hearty meal. Our liquor was the pure stream that ran from the rock. This done, I desired Harry to amuse his friends with a song, which he did in a very droll manner, with great variety of action, snapping of fingers, &c. When Harry had finished, they all got up, took each other by the hand, and began singing and dancing after their rude manner. They used but little motion, being no more than a kind of gentle trot, stopping every now and then to give a loud whoop. When they were pretty well tired with dancing, they retired to the porch of the cave, and fell asleep.

I grew so fond of the little boy, that he seemed delighted to play with me. He would sometimes touch my beard, and then shrink back to his mother, and hide his face. She asked Luta why I did not pluck it out as their men did. She told her it was not the custom in my country; that white men used to cut it off with sharp knives, but that I had none of them, and therefore let it grow. Lama-atty observed, she should not

like to feel her husband's face so. Luta laughed at her for this, and then laid her cheek on the head of the child.

Luta told me, her sister had informed her that they had brought some things in the boat for us, which I was glad to hear ; and that Lama-atty said, she was glad to find her with child, as that would make me love her harder ; but Luta told her that could not be, unless I was to eat her. This made me laugh so loud that it awakened the men, who all came out to us. Shortly after Lama-atty said somewhat to Zula-wana. They went immediately down to their boats, and brought up to us a bundle of bass rope, four earthen pots made of fine red clay, about half a peck of Lima beans, some very small peas, rotten oranges, long sweet potatoes, and other sorts of roots ; about three handfuls of Indian corn, mammees, avogatos, cashoo nuts, squashes, pompion, and gourd seeds, all in the planting way. They gave us also five cocoa-nuts and some cotton seed, with several other things, of which I knew not even the names. They brought with them two dogs, which, I must confess, I could not help coveting. They differed considerably from our dogs, were of a middle size, of the colour of rusty iron, with their ears erect, and broad-faced, having sharp snouts, and stump-tails. I wished much for one of them, but was fearful of asking, lest I might appear greedy ; but Owa-gamy, observing my fondness, made me signs that I should have one of them when they went away, to keep off the wild beasts.

The Indians now began to talk to Luta about planting, and gave her very good advice upon the subject. I asked their opinion about planting a fence round our abode, to guard us from the tigers, &c. This they

strongly objected to, saying, the more trees we had about us, the more we should be troubled with the mosquitoes. I took their advice. They continued with us five days, when they began to prepare for their departure, collecting provisions for their voyage. I gave them every assistance in my power, and the fullest assurances of a hearty welcome, whenever they or any of their people would favour us with another visit. Just as they were leaving us, Zula-wana took one of the dogs, and tied it to a stump for me, which made me quite happy. When they took boat, we accompanied them out into the bay.

At parting, I made Harry give them once more his song, which he did, and they all sang in their turns. Hearing the dog howl very much, I took the opportunity of asking them how we should feed him, as we had so little flesh. They laughed, and said, he would eat fish or fruit as well. I then desired to know when they would pay us another visit. They said after many moons, when they could walk by their neighbours with good countenances. By this I judged they were at war. I then desired Harry to inform them, that it was my desire they would never communicate my being on this shore to the Spaniards, as my nation was at war with them, and they would be glad to take and send me to work in their mines. I should then be for ever lost to them and Luta. They one and all made signs that they would comply with my request, and would sooner be burnt with great fires than betray me; and I gave them full credit for their sincerity and attachment.

We kept them company as far out as the Long Key, and then took our leave, with much lamentation among the women, especially poor Luta, who wept bitterly on

parting with her sister. I must confess that I was myself much affected ; perhaps I was taking my last leave of some of the most affectionate and disinterested of mortals, who had supplied my necessities with the greatest attention and humanity, and had made a voyage of so many leagues for the sole purpose of visiting me, and anticipating those wants, which they well knew my forlorn situation exposed me to, by an ample provision of most useful articles. Yet these were untutored savages. I blush for civilized Europeans !

On our return, our first business was to make some wooden shovels to turn up the earth with. These cost us some trouble, as we were obliged to make them out of solid timber in the best manner we could. I began now to advise Harry respecting his future conduct to his wife, and desired that he would in every respect behave to her, as he should observe me do to his sister. As he saw I was very serious, he made me a very low bow, and promised to obey me in every thing, and in the present instance with the greatest pleasure. He then brought Carra-wouma to me, and desired that I would give her a new name, as I had before done to his sister and himself. I told him we would call her Patty ; which was the first name that came into my head. He asked me what was the meaning of that name in English. This puzzled me a little. I told him, however, it meant fine girl. This pleased him very well, as perhaps any other would have done. My family was now increased to five, including the dog.

Our next business to attend to was planting ; and this I considered it would be best to begin at the old burnt ground, near our first habitation, as I was fearful we might be troubled here with the wild beasts ; and

as I had never seen any on the low coast near the sea, I thought that would suit us best. This occupation took us up more than a fortnight. We now found the turtles began to draw in for the shore, their time of laying being near. We followed them every day till we had caught eight. It then came into my mind that we were taking more trouble than was necessary; and I observed to Harry, if we watched them when they came on shore to lay, it might answer our purpose much better; we should then take all females, the males at this season being very lean, and not good for much. We followed this practice till we had turned so many that we found it necessary to desist.

One fine moonlight night, as we were at this sport, Harry somewhat too impatient for the turtle to fix herself, she discovered him, and made at once back for the sea. Observing this, he ran and got astride on her back, grasping the forepart of her callipash. Seeing this, I ran too and got on behind, and Patty came and clung round my waist. Notwithstanding this, she was so large and strong, that she scabbled us fairly into the sea. Patty tumbled off backwards. I slid off on one side and lost my hat; but Harry stuck on her, till she sank him up to his chin, and then he left her. This little adventure occasioned much laughter, and Luta had full enjoyment of the scene from the beach. Having regained my hat, we returned home for the night.

The next morning early, we returned to the scene of action, and with much labour conveyed eleven turtles to our crawl, the least of which weighed near three hundred weight. We had at the same time eight chicken turtle. We sometimes procured sea-grass for

them, with conches and welks, and it was surprising to see with what ease they cracked the shells, though they were as hard as flint.

We now passed our time easily and pleasantly, and wanted for nothing; yet I must confess that I sometimes longed to taste bread, which had not passed my lips for some years. What little clothes I had left, were husbanded with the strictest care; not for the use I made of them at present, but there was something painful in the idea of being deprived of them; it seemed to shut me out from the possibility of returning to the world I had left, and to confine me to a savage state for life. However fanciful this association may appear, I really felt that such a deprivation would have given me the pain I have described.

My lady now drew near her time, and we had the sad misfortune for Harry to fall sick. Patty proved a very tender and good nurse, but I was sadly put to it, as he took to his bed of leaves, and was in a high fever. I found that Luta and Patty had some knowledge in herbs, and they made tea for him, while I prepared weak soups. He was at times delirious, and wanted to go a-fishing, or to see his sister Lama-atty. Having no assistance, I was obliged to take all our concerns on myself, and go to the old cave for yams and turtle, and likewise to fish.

One morning early, as I was going on one of these errands, I met with a most serious alarm. Just as I got out of our lagoon, I beheld a sloop at anchor, off the end of the Long Key. I saw men walking along the shore, where they had pitched a tent. I was so affrighted, that I trembled in every joint. I had scarcely power to proceed or to put back. Recovering myself a little, I got within the point, being certain

they had not seen me, as I was so close under the land. I put up the lagoon, and made for our habitation. The first thing I did was to put out the fire. Luta seeing me much agitated, desired to know the cause. I waved it. But when she saw me take out the glass and run up the hill, she asked me if some of their people were coming. This was enough; Harry overheard her question, ran out, and, ill as he was, would follow me. When we arrived at the top, I could plainly see five or six men clothed, and I knew them to be Spaniards by their broad hats. While I was looking, I saw them kindle up a large fire, and some of them went off on the ramble. I likewise heard the report of a gun, and saw the smoke. This at once convinced me they were not Indians, and I determined to avoid them with as much caution as possible. Harry had been so elated with the hopes of seeing his countrymen, that he acted as if nothing ailed him, and wanted me to go immediately to meet them. I refused: and as I was carelessly leaning over a crooked stump, eagerly watching them, the root of the tree gave way, and tumbled me down the declivity for some yards, till I was stopped by a sharp pointed rock. I was much scratched and hurt, and lay quite helpless, as my leg and back were greatly torn by the stones. Harry called Patty, and between them they conveyed me down the hill. I was quite unable to move. Patty gathered medicinal herbs, my wife boiled them, and washed my wounds. I was very uneasy lest Harry should relapse. This and the enemy being almost at our door, troubled me sadly. However, contrary to my expectations, Harry kept upon his legs tolerably well, and after my wounds had been well bathed, I found my spirits quite revived, and that I was not so much

hurt as I feared. I bade him go and hunt for the glass, and keep a good look-out. He soon came back with it, and told me the strangers were not yet gone. The next morning he went up very early, and said they were there yet, and were going about in a boat. My patience would hold no longer. I was resolved to go myself. Attempting to stand, I found my right leg was very stiff, so that I could hardly put it to the ground. Yet I was resolved to hobble up the hill, with the assistance of Harry and Patty. This I accomplished with some difficulty, and seated myself with my glass in my hand to watch the motions of the enemy. I found they were just striking their tent. As we had eaten nothing since their appearance, we now began to regale ourselves on some turtle-eggs. They staid there all this day; and we spent the second night in the same state of fear and uncertainty as the first. The next morning Harry brought us word they were all gone. I put my best leg foremost, and mounted the hill. They were out of sight; but by the help of my glass I could just discover the sloop standing close hauled to the eastward. Who they were or what was their errand, I never could learn, but felt glad enough that they were gone.

This happened about five years and three months after my landing on this shore. The next day Luta presented me with a son. I called him Owen, that being the name of my father. The following day was remarkable also, by my discovering a large ship in the offing. When I first observed her, she was a great way out, standing to the westward. We soon lost sight of her, and she never nighed the shore again. This was the first large ship I had seen near the coast in all my time.

A few days after this, an aloe began to blossom directly before our dwelling ; it was surprising to see the rapid progress it made in a short time. I had seen many before, but never one so large, and so fair within view. In the space of twelve days or a fortnight, it grew to the height of thirty feet, as I judged, full of the most beautiful tufts of yellow flowers, and scented the place all round. The humming birds, bees, wasps, and flies, were feeding all day on its sweets, so that it became quite a living habitation. It was visited by a particular sort of the humming bird, which had two feathers in its tail three times the length of the bird. In one point of view, it was profoundly black ; but in another, shone with green and gold. Harry knocked one of them down with a blunt arrow, but struck away one of the long feathers out of its tail. I preserved it a long time, till it was destroyed by vermin.

One day as Harry was out on his rambles, he saw a green parrot fly out of the hole in an old palmetto-tree : he examined, and found two young birds in the nest, which he brought home, scarcely fledged ; he took great care of them, and continually fed them with guavas, and other wild fruits. At length they would eat yam and plantain, of which we found plenty in the woods, and Harry planted several from suckers. We had also a quantity of good squashes and pumpkins coming on, as every thing seemed to thrive rapidly.

Patty came on in her English very fast ; and really in her person she was what might be called a fine girl, taller than Luta, and of a lighter colour, but not so plump, and somewhat older. Whenever we went abroad any where, Luta had a large piece of bark to fix the children on ; and it cost me a pair of trowsers

for baby linens. Thus we lived for a long time, without seeing a soul except our own family. We ate and drank, lay down and got up, just as we pleased, and without the least disturbance; each day was a copy of the foregoing; we were blessed with good health, and my companions had nothing to wish for.

For my own part, I must confess, I felt some regrets for the world I had quitted. I wished for one of my own country to converse with. Neither time nor distance had eradicated from my breast the love I bore to my native land. My social affections were warm and unabated; yet I reflected, that if I had been favoured with such a companion, it might have occasioned troubles which I had now escaped; and though I was taken from the joys of the busy world, I had none of its cares to torment me. Rancour or malevolence could not reach my dwelling; envy and strife were not inmates of my retreat. I had reason to bless God for the deliverances he had vouchsafed to grant me, and to be contented with that portion of earthly happiness, which it had pleased him to prepare for me in this solitary desert.

At first I took a great dislike to the parrots, as they made a sad squalling noise. However, as they diverted the rest of my family, I thought myself bound to bear with them. In a little time they began to chatter, and then I could not help talking with them myself. Luta took great pains with them, and taught them several things; amongst the rest, as she had a great dislike to my beard, she would take them on her finger, and teach them to say, "long beard, nasty, cut it off, cut it off;" then, "where Penoly fader, where Penoly moder?" and to speak all our names. If at any time they grew dull, they gave

to each of them a bunch of goat, or bird-pepper, when they would begin to chatter immediately ; and if Luta saw me inclined to be melancholy, she would threaten to give me some bird-pepper too.

Some time after Harry came home, and reported that he had seen the wild beasts,—more than a hundred of them. This surprised me much, and I asked how he had escaped them ? He said, he was not afraid of them.

“ Of what sort were they, then ? ”

He told me they were a kind of hog with white faces. I therefore supposed them to be what I had heard called warrees.

“ Why did you not set the dog to hunt them ? ” said I.

“ No, no,” he replied, “ too many ; if dog catch one, all the rest bite dog to death.”

I knew Harry to be a skilful sportsman, therefore gave him full credit for this intelligence. I was, however, determined to invent some stratagem to entrap them ; and set my wits to work for that purpose. In all this time I had never seen more than two tigers, and Harry one. We found that setting up a loud shouting made them turn tail at once, and this made me easier on their account ; but I took great care never to suffer either Luta or Patty to wander in the woods alone.

One day Patty brought home some of the candle fruit or cassia fistula. It is about the length of a foot ; and when green, and a quantity of them together, they hang dangling like myrtle candles from the tree. When ripe, they resemble black puddings in colour. She told me they were good, when put into hot water, against pains in the bowels or costiveness. The sub-

stance within resembles tar, and is very sweet. I used to dilute a small quantity of it in water, and squeezing a lime into it, make a very tolerable beverage. In colour it resembled coffee.

We had not tasted a guano for a long time, as none of them frequented our quarter, the soil not being sandy. We therefore determined on a voyage to Tower's-Field to hunt them. As a necessary precaution, we took all our family with us, except the parrots. We left them behind, in a sort of cage we had made for them, with plenty of victuals to serve till our return. We then put away down the lagoon ; my wife, child, and self in the large canoe ; Harry, his wife, and dog, in the other. Thus we proceeded to the old dwelling, where we went on shore, and took our repast. It now came into my head to visit the key where we had lately seen the Spaniards. We found the marks of their tent, the boom of an old oar, made of green heart, and exceedingly heavy. At some distance we found a jar that would hold about three gallons. It was made of coarse earthenware, and round at the bottom. Harry picked up a case with a knife and fork in it. They were very rusty, but we soon made them fit for use. They had sunk a barrel into my well, as a legacy to those who should chance to land there at a future time. We shipped our things ; and just as we were putting off, I picked up a good fishing-line and sinker, but without a hook. When we got over to the other side, we stood along shore, and arrived at our hunting ground. Our dog soon ran down four guanos, and we gathered a parcel of limes. We then put back to our old dwelling, where we slept that night, and the next morning reached home, found all secure, but can scarcely

describe the joy of the poor parrots at our return; they did not cease to chatter all the day, and often repeated our names.

Harry was a very good marksman. I observed him one day strike a duck flying, with his bow and arrow. Not thinking myself too old to learn any thing that was useful, I was resolved to become his pupil, and desired him to make me a new bow, that I might learn to shoot at marks with him. I knew this would be useful, particularly as I found, in the above instance, that our dog hunted like a spaniel, though not at all resembling that species, and would take the water very freely. I gave him the name of Swift; he never barked, but in the night would at times give a long howl.

Thus our time passed on, till I found I had been on this shore five years and nine months. The rainy season now came on; and we kept much within doors, if I may be allowed the expression, when our habitation had no door at all. Our cascade was now become a foaming cataract of red water, thick and muddy. It continued this sublime appearance for more than a fortnight, and then subsided by degrees. We used to fill our large jar and calabashes, and set them by to settle, till fit for use. In regard to food, we fared sumptuously; seldom wanting a boil, a roast, or a stew. When Harry killed the duck, he made a short wooden spit, and stuck the bird on it; he then fixed it in the ground, inclining to the fire, turning it now and then till it was done. Our guanos we always stewed.

When the wet season was past, Harry proposed to go out and strike some sting-rays. He said they had bones in their tails fit to make arrow-heads. As this

is a fish little known in Europe, I shall give a description of it.

They resemble thornbacks; and I have seen some of them that would weigh more than two hundred pounds. Just at the dock of its tail are fixed those bones, one above another. I have seen them with three, point behind point—they are very sharp at the end, with exceeding fine teeth on each side. As they lie flat on the tail, the teeth are in a contrary direction to their points; so that when the fish is irritated, it erects the tail, and darts these spears into its enemy, tearing out the flesh wherever it strikes, and leaves great anguish in the wound for a long time after, as I have felt by experience. Their skins are sharp-grained like a shark. There is another kind of them, whose skins are exceeding hard and rough; and are sometimes brought to Europe for the use of cabinet-makers. This is called the rasp-ray. There is yet a third sort of them called the whip-ray. This differs from the others by having the head somewhat resembling the tortoise. The back is bluish, with studs of small white circles all over it. The skin is very smooth and shining, with a tail black as jet, and of such a length, that one of the size of a common thornback shall have its tail at least six feet long.

In pursuit of this fish, Harry went in his own canoe, and was out almost the whole day. He brought home about seven bones, having struck three fish. He said he had been detained so long in consequence of the last he struck, which being a very large fish, the staff slipped out of his hand as he made his stroke, and the ray immediately made its way into deep water, with the spear sticking in its back;

and had it not returned again to the shore, he would have lost the whole, which we could not very well spare, and should have felt the want of greatly.

CHAPTER X.

SEVENTH YEAR OF MY RESIDENCE.

THIS year commenced with an ill stroke of fortune to me, which happened thus:—We all took a small trip to the cave for yams and potatoes. While I was there I took it into my head to bathe in the sea; but I paid dearly for it. After swimming about for some time, I had an inclination to come to shore; and feeling with my feet for the ground, I felt something suddenly dart into both of them, which gave me most excruciating pain. I scrabbled to shore as well as I could; but the moment I left the water, I fell down on the sand. Harry ran to know what was the matter with me, and found both my feet full of the darts of sea-eggs. By this time I was in such an agony that I was ready to faint. He directly ran for Luta and Patty; and with some difficulty they got me into the canoe, put on my clothes, and then hurried me home as fast as possible. By this time my feet were so swollen that I could not put them to the ground. They were forced to carry me to bed; and, having laid me quietly down, Luta got some prickly pear-leaves, split, and then toasted them at the fire, and applied one to each foot, binding them on. From this time

till the next day I remained in a high fever; it then somewhat abated. She took off the leaves, and my feet appeared as if they had been boiled. The thorns came all away with the leaves, and I was soon easy, but could not walk for three or four days, my feet were so excessively tender.

These sea-eggs are of that class of beings that seldom move from their station. They are of many different sorts, shaped like an orange, divided into curious lines of partition, spotted with green, yellow, red, and brown. Some have no thorns at all; but the sort from which I received my injury, have darts four or five inches long, and are black. These darts they play about in the water, directing them, as a man would a sword, any way they list.

Soon after this we were entertained with a very diverting scene. One of the parrots got out of its cage and flew to a distance. It rested at length on a cashoo tree, and continued there for some time, pluming itself, and enjoying its liberty. A flock of wild parrots passing over discovered it, and immediately, as by general consent, settled upon the same tree. Patty saw them first, and called us to partake of the entertainment; and it proved a truly comic one. They began by walking side-way up to the tame bird—placed their heads parallel to his—then one of them gave him a peck, and another overhead did the like. The bird held up his leg to ward off the blow—others would give him a slap with the wing. At length they all gathered round, and began to pay him off at a terrible rate. Upon this the poor bird called loudly, “Harry! Harry! run quick.” The moment he began to speak, they all flew away, screaming like mad things, and to all appearance terribly fright-

ened. Our parrot began to laugh loudly, flew home to his cage, and began to chatter to the other bird, who now and then made an odd kind of noise, as if it understood all that was said. This diverted Harry so much that he quite rolled on the ground, laughing violently.

Soon after this Harry expressed a desire to go after the flamingos. I consented; and he took the dog with him the next morning, in the small canoe. He did not return that day; but knowing that he had materials for making fire, and that he was at a considerable distance, I did not make myself uneasy.—An Indian is at home every where, by night or by day.

The next morning was opened with a new adventure. I called Patty to rise and make the fire, as her husband would soon be home. She went out to fetch wood; but soon came running back to us, crying, “there was great thing—dog—fell down—from top—over head!” I could not comprehend the meaning of this; so got up and followed to the entrance of the cave where she was making the fire, when down came another animal. I took courage to examine further, and found they were piccaries, and both of them ebowelled. This I considered as some of Mr. Harry’s fun; but as the dog did not come in as usual, I was puzzled to account for it. Presently I heard a loud laugh over our heads. I was alarmed, and snatched up an axe, resolved to stand my ground and defend myself to the last. A voice now called out distinctly, “Yalut-ta! Yalut-ta!” Upon which I answered, “Come down, Mr. Harry, and let us have no more of your dog tricks.” And indeed I began to be angry with him; and my spirits were so hurried, that I did not notice the different [pronunciation and tone of

voice. An Indian now shewed himself, and I presently discovered him to be Komaloot. Upon this I called Luta and Patty, being quite overjoyed, and made signs to him to meet me. I ran at once up the hill, and found Komaloot, Owa-gamy, Zula-wana, and a young Indian I had never seen before, called Sama-lumy. I saluted them all, and they returned it with cordiality. They were all four armed with bows and arrows, and maschuts or cutlasses. When we got down the joy was universal. Komaloot took the child in his arms, and hugged it. They inquired for Harry. Luta told him he was gone after flamingos. I then asked how they came so secretly to surprise us? Owa-gamy told Luta, that being out in search of game, they came to a fine open country, and Komaloot made the proposal to find out our place, to which they all agreed. After some days they found they had gone beyond us, which they knew by getting up a large tree, from which they discovered a smoke on the right, near the coast, which they concluded must be our abode, and immediately turned off for it. In their way they met with a few piccary hogs, and killed two of them. They gutted, and cut out their navels, intending them as a present for us.

N. B.—The navel of this animal is on its back; and if not cut out as soon as the beast is dead, the whole carcase taints soon after.

He said they discovered us at last by the great smoke Patty made in lighting our fire, as Sama-lumy was then got up a tree quite near our habitation. They soon came in sight, and then called a council, in which it was determined to proceed in the manner they had done, lest their sudden appearance should

alarm us too much. I desired Luta to return them my thanks for their good conduct.

While Patty was preparing a repast for our visitors, the dog came running in ; and I knew Harry was at no great distance. The poor animal was quite transported at the sight of his old masters. Harry now made his appearance, quite in scarlet, from head to foot, with his flamingos—his great straw hat on his head ; in one hand he held his bow and arrows, and in the other a quantity of plantains. When he saw our family was increased, he stopped short. I called him to come on. The moment he discovered who our company was, down went all his cargo at once ; and he began laughing, shouting, and dancing, with many other grotesque expressions of his joy, at seeing his old friends.

Harry inquired for their canoe. When they told him they came over-land, he asked how many tigers they had seen. Upon this question they sent the young Indian off, who soon returned with the skin of a tiger on his shoulders. This skin Owa-gamy presented to me. There was a very extraordinary greeting between our dog and two they brought with them. He seemed fond of shewing them every place, and took them all over the grounds.

We now began to inquire for their families. They told us Lama-atty had another child, a girl, and that they had made friends with the other Indians, after a long variance. I asked if the young Indian they brought with them was a capture ? They said, no, he was a relation ; that he was under some trouble, and they wanted to bury him. I could not understand this, and desired Luta to inquire what it meant. Ko-

maloot took Luta aside, and held her in talk some time. After this Luta told her brother to take the young Indian, and shew him all round the place. When they were gone, she told me it was the desire of our friends that I would consent to their leaving Sama-lumy to live with us for a time, for which they had a very good reason: that my agreeing to this would prove I had a true regard for them, and in consequence they would be happy to oblige me in all things; that Sama-lumy would serve me faithfully, and to the hazard of his life. I knew not what to think of this, and desired Luta would request them to be plain and open with me in this business.

Owa-gamy then took me by the hand, gave me a very piercing look, and made a long and very nervous oration to me, which he bade Luta to interpret. She told me that as her friends understood I was much in dread of the mines, they were so far from discovering me to the Spaniards, that they would rather suffer death than betray me. Sama-lumy was now under the same terror, and they thought it best to bring him off to me, that he might be concealed till such time as he should be forgotten, or would grow out of their knowledge.

I at once took them by the hands, and desired Luta to tell them to confide in me as their sure friend in time of need. On which they all thanked me. I then begged Luta to give me a relation of the misfortune that had happened to the young man. Sama-lumy, she said, had been to visit some of his relations, who lived among the Spaniards; that by ill luck he had made free to hang round his neck a string of beads, with a little cross to it. As they were all playing together, he had the misfortune to break the cross, by striking another with it on the back: this was perceived by

a little girl, who ran and informed a Padre of it, who was not far off. The Padre came, and was very angry with him, called him perro savage, for presuming to meddle with it, for it was holy ; but that he would soon find him better employment in the mines ; then left him in a great rage. This so terrified Sama-lumy that he took the first opportunity of slipping away to his friends ; who, on his giving this information, had shifted from place to place, till they thought of this scheme of bringing him to us for better security.

I now saw the whole drift of this land visit, and gave them credit for their ingenuity and address. Owa-gamy told me, whenever the Padres fell out with those who had nothing to pay for an offence, they never ceased to pursue them by their arts, till they had obtained their revenge, though they pretended to pity them. They took care to have them taken in hold by an officer, and then they never saw the priest's face more, but were immediately conveyed to the mines.

Harry and Sama-lumy now returned. They were acquainted with what had passed. Harry was mightily pleased to have a companion, and the young Indian made me many signs of gratitude for consenting to his stay, and thus protecting him from the cruelty of the Spaniards. I desired Harry to get me a flat stone, that I might set down the translation of his name on it, and record the circumstance. I then asked what the meaning of Sama-lumy was. Luta conferred with Harry, and afterwards informed me that it was mountaineer. I put it down, and ordered the stone to be placed away among the rest. They now asked me how the seeds came on ; and were informed we had most of the things now in plenty, except the oranges and cocoanuts. Owa-gamy said that would be many long moons

first. He then directed his discourse to the young Indian ; and, as I was told, charged him to mind all my directions, and be my true and faithful friend ; to be sure to be obliging and tender to the women, &c. Sama-lumy begged they would leave him his dog. This they did ; and then took their farewell, saying they would come again when they had time.

When the Indians were gone, I began to reflect on the probable consequences of this transaction. If the Spaniards should by any means come at the knowledge of it, it might involve my whole family in ruin. Admitting, therefore, the probability of their discovering my retreat, he must at all events be off, and not by his presence complete the destruction of those who had granted him protection.

One day as we were all three shooting at a coot, Harry told me Sama-lumy wanted a new name, that he might be considered as one of our family. I told him that was right, and he might call him Toby, if he pleased. He inquired if that was a good name. I told him it was ; that it was the name of a young man who took great care of an old blind father. This was satisfactory, and he was salled Toby from that day.

Thus we lived for a considerable time. Our little one began to waddle about. Harry's wife grew bulky, and promised an addition to our family, of which he was not a little proud. The burthen of providing for my family was in a great measure taken off my hands by my two assistants, and I only went now and then for my pleasure. One day as the lads were on the look-out, they came down and reported that they saw a vessel out at sea. When I went to examine with my glass, I saw three ; they appeared to be standing in for the land, with the wind at west. As they came in shore, I

found two of them to be schooners, the other a sloop. They put about soon after, and we saw them no more till the evening, when they stood in again, then tacked, and left us for good and all. I made a memorandum of it on the side of the rock with my knife.

About this time I put my two messmates on digging pit-falls for catching the warrees and piccaries. This they laboured at for several days together, and dug six of them. We baited them with plantains, yams, potatoes, and the like. Now and then we used to catch one, but we were obliged to knock it on the head before we dared go down, they were so fierce and courageous.

I shall now mention a circumstance which led to a useful discovery. I asked Harry if he had ever seen a lizard with two tails, having been informed that such had sometimes been seen. He said he thought he had, and inquired of Toby. It happened soon after this, that Toby, being out on his rambles, imagined he saw such a thing run under a bush. In poking his head after it, he met with a sad disaster. I was the first who saw him return; but he was so disguised and altered, that I scarcely knew him. He had stuck lumps of red clay all over him, one on his cheek, another on his leg, two on his thighs, and one on his breast. Some of them he had bound up with a sort of long grass; and altogether he cut so strange a figure, that I called my family out to look at him. This made him laugh; but the scene now became heightened beyond all description. His eyes were almost closed up, and his under-lip swollen to an immense size, shewing his teeth so remarkably that they laughed at him immoderately; but as I was ignorant of the cause, I was more inclined to be alarmed than to be merry at so melancholy a spectacle. However, he soon made a shift to inform us

of the adventure. Luta and Patty then made use of the old receipt ; and by the next day he was quite well, and gave us a droll account of the business.

The poor fellow thought he saw a two-tailed lizard run under a bush ; and to satisfy his curiosity, he ran his head into a wasp's or hornet's nest, where he was stung to some purpose. His description was, "two tail go in—go in Toby—good look bush—maum come—maum maum bite Toby—run Toby, run Toby, no see two tail tomorrow." This accident gave us a knowledge of the clay he made use of ; and I found by burning it in the fire that good earthen ware might be made of it, if we could shape it into vessels ; but this was a kind of manufactory I but little understood. However, I resolved to set my two messmates to work on this clay, and they brought a great quantity of it. I then made them temper it ; and our first trial was thus : I got one of the large calabashes, and oiled it round, then daubed the clay all round it without, and by this means made a huge ugly sort of yabba or pot. After it had stood by to dry for a time, we burnt it, and it answered tolerably well to hold water, and would boil things likewise, but from its size was very unwieldy. After this first rude essay, we made several other articles of domestic furniture, which were very useful.

CHAPTER XI.

ABOUT this time I made a fresh calculation of my time, and found I had been on this shore six years and somewhat more than five months. I became every day more composed in my mind. I was anxious to subdue every desire, to damp every expectation, of returning to my native country, and to submit myself entirely to the will of that Providence that had hitherto so graciously preserved and supported me. Under these impressions my spirits were calm and unruffled. I was awake to all the enjoyments that offered in my contracted domestic circle. I was a husband, a father, and the patriarchal chief of my little family. My duties were my pleasures ; they were few ; they were easily defined : I had but to bless God, and be happy ; and I trust I was so.

A few days after this, Patty presented her husband with a daughter. I had now acquired considerable skill with the bow ; but could never make myself equal to Harry or Toby, who would strike a small humming bird at twenty yards distance with a blunted arrow ; but my proficiency was such as to encourage further exertion.

The world seems to be divided between credulity and scepticism. There are readers who are willing to believe every extraordinary thing related to them ; there are others who obstinately refuse to give credit to any, that have not been submitted to the evidence of their senses. There are, however, extremes on both sides. To steer between them is the effort of

cool discriminating judgment. There are few travellers who have not seen things which they are unwilling to relate; not from the slightest doubt in their own minds as to the reality of such objects, but, being somewhat out of the common order, they are fearful of the imputation of extravagance in their narrations, and would rather suppress a circumstance well worthy to be known, than incur the character of wilful falsehood or weak credulity.

I have been led to these reflections by many extraordinary things which have come under my own observation, of the wonderful economy and management of nature in the animal and vegetable world. An instance or two I shall mention; and I leave it to the reader's candour, after the above declaration, to believe or not, as he shall think proper. I will begin with the pudeling wythe, a kind of vine, which, after it has aspired to the top of the proudest tree in the forest, drops down perpendicularly, like a number of bell-ropes, all of a thickness, till within about four feet of the earth; it then sprouts out like the tail of a horse, but on touching the ground takes root afresh, and ascends as before. The next instance I will give, is the shrub called the flying prickly pear, whose minute thorns are so very fine and subtile, that when the wind blows, and any person is to the leeward of them, they will insinuate themselves through his skin imperceptibly, at the distance of twenty or thirty yards. This I assert on the evidence of my own senses.

About this time we were annoyed by a most disagreeable smell. The wind was then north-easterly, and the stench at times became very offensive. I inquired if they had left any fish garbage, but could find

none. At last it became so bad that it was absolutely necessary to find out the cause. I went, therefore, with Toby, in the large canoe, along the east shore; but when we got beyond our old dwelling, the smell became intolerable, and came in such sudden puffs, that I was scarcely able to support myself. At length I thought I saw something on a point of land, right off Tower's Field, (as I called it) resembling a ship's long boat, bottom upwards. The stench now became still more powerful, and came directly into our mouths. I began to suspect the true cause, and made a stretch out in order to weather it. When we got to the windward side, I found it to be a dead whale, lying along on its side. As we drew near to it, we saw thousands of birds flying in all directions about it. The fish were as numerous below, and amongst them some of the largest sharks I ever beheld, measuring fifteen or sixteen feet. There were likewise snappers, barrow-cooters, cavallos, and many other kinds in abundance. This whale, as I judged, was near sixty feet in length.

I asked Toby, if he had ever seen so large a fish before?

"Not up," said he, "but much out in the big water—blow water—like wind, blow."

I had never myself seen one before so near. The mouth was wide open, which gave me an opportunity of learning the nature of what is commonly called whalebone. It lies round the roof of the mouth, supplying, as I judged, the place of gills, or as a kind of strainer to retain their prey.

Having thus satisfied my curiosity, at the expense of my sense of smelling, we returned, and made our report at home. We had this filthy smell for above a week longer, while the breeze stood our way, and it

was above a month to be seen above water. When the smell was somewhat abated, I paid it another visit; but its appearance was now quite changed,—all the ribs were parted, and most of the fish gone.

A considerable time after this, Harry and Toby went to Tower's Field for guanos and limes. As they were fond of sailing, they took a stretch out to the remains of the whale; and as they were satisfying their curiosity, they saw at some distance the wreck of a vessel to the northward. On this they made the best of their way home to inform me. I inquired if they had seen any people? They said no. As the distance was at least five leagues, it was necessary to make some arrangements at home previous to my visit to the wreck. Having done this, I left Harry with my family; and being well provided with necessaries, proceeded with my second mate Toby.

We paddled down the lagoon, and then stood directly out for a considerable stretch. Having passed our old dwelling, the next tack we fetched almost as far as Tower's Field. We then proceeded till we came abreast of the Whale Point, from whence I could see over to the wreck. It was evening before we arrived at it. We found it was a brigantine, and by all appearance had been lost some time. Her bows were sunk in the sand; her main, fore, and fore-top-masts were yet standing; but the main-top-mast gone, and the bowsprit also. Part of her fore-sail was yet to the yard; the boom hung over the starboard-side, with part of her main-sail yet hanging in the water, over the starboard-quarter. Her hatches were gone, and I could see much sand in her hold, through which I could discover chimbs, as of barrels. Every thing was gone from the quarter-deck; even the doors of the

companion. The cabouse lay sunk under the bow. The vessel appeared to be about seventy tons burthen ; she had a black stern, and on it was painted, in white letters, Saint Pablo.

I asked Toby if he would go down into the cabin, as she was but little beneath the surface abaft ? This he did, and brought out a jug of a long shape, and well stopped. He went down again and brought up an old hat, and the third time a small sheet. I then cut away the fore-braces and one sheet, and put to shore for that night, exposed enough ; but this we were accustomed to. The next morning we went off again. It was then quite calm. I cut away several pieces of her sail-cloth, and then left her. We were obliged to paddle away with all our might, and did not get home till the forenoon of the third day. We found all well, and much rejoiced at our return. I tasted the bottle we brought with us from the wreck, and found it contained some fine aqua dienta, which I laid by as a reserve against a time of sickness. This was the first liquor stronger than water I had tasted for above six years, and it was quite unpleasant to me.

Our young lime and orange-trees came on finely ; and two of the cocoa-nuts were burst out of the ground to the size of flour-barrels, and had shot forth most ample leaves. The guavas came up wherever we dropped the seeds.

I now dispatched Harry and Toby to the wreck, giving them a charge to make the best observations they could along the bay, for any thing that might have drifted on shore, and to bring home with them whatever they found of any use. They were absent three days, and returned the fourth about noon. They had

a barrel in their boat, which, on first sight, I took to be pitch or tar ; some of the smaller rigging ; a wooden bowl ; part of the companion ; two small boards ; a bag of nails, with an oar.

The next day Harry went a-fishing in the lagoon. He came back to tell me he had hooked a monstrous fish, and that it had carried away his hook. "It is a shark," said I. "No, no," he replied, "it was a large brown fish." I then judged it to be either a rock or jew-fish : and away we went, with three conches for bait, with the shark-hook. When we got to the place he shewed us, I threw over the bait, and it was not long before the gentleman took it. Away he towed the canoe up the lagoon, until he was quite spent. Our shouting brought out Luta and Patty, so that they partook of a part of the sport. It was a rock-fish, that weighed at least sixty pounds. We got a paddle into his mouth, and then reefed a rope through his gills, and made him fast to the mangroves. Harry recovered his hook also. Just as this sport was over, Toby told Harry to listen. We all stood in suspense for a few minutes, and then heard a conch-shell sounding at a distance. Away ran Harry and Toby, and were on the cliff in a minute. There they began hallooing, "Yo, yo, yo—more canoes coming!" I took my glass and went up. I could distinctly count seven canoes, all under sail, and standing right in for the lagoon. I began to think they might be too many ; but as I had ever found them kind and faithful, I plucked up my courage. I got into our canoe with Harry, and went out to meet them. We lay by for them ; and as they came in I hailed them, and they all began to sing. We then stood away a-head until they entered the lagoon. I then hailed them again. I was answered, "Amigos, Signor," from my good

friend Komaloot. I could not help smiling to hear him salute me in Spanish. Luta and Patty waited their landing with their children; but when they came on shore, I could have wished half of them back again, being no less than twenty-five in number, males and females. We gave them a kind reception, and took them all up to our castle; where the greeting that took place among the women was quite diverting. They admired my little boy much, and praised his white colour. I found this to be a visit of mere curiosity to see how we went on.

Harry ran away to the brook to fetch some flat stones to mark down the names of our visitors. Upon this, my friend Komaloot ordered them all to be seated, and performed himself the office of master of the ceremonies. He first presented to me his own wife, Inna-sary.—Luta said it meant yellow flower. Then came Owa-gamy, and his wife Lama-atty; her cousin, called Quali-rema, or a tall vine; next a brother of Toby's, whose name was Yova-wan, or paddle-maker; Nocana-bara; or a commander; a girl called Ina-linca, or mellow fruit; Nooná-waiak, or the dreamer; Razua-bano, or a great hunter; Kona-sove, or basket-maker; Futee, who had been here before; Matta-linea, or red fruit; Soro-seet, or crab-catcher; Gatto-loon, or fore-caster; Latto-gamy, or the returner; Shoa-tate, or a bird-catcher; Wayahe-ga, or comptroller; Zula-wana, here before; Gayna-santo, or a bewildered person; a boy called Fari-beed, or a singing-bird; another called Muzzo-gayah, a fighter; a third, Koura-coon, or a spy; a girl called Vina-quota, or a favourite; and one yet younger, aged about thirteen, called Iasa-wina, or honey-sucker.

I then ordered all the names to be laid up safe, and they looked upon it as a great honour paid them.

They were all dressed and painted in a very gay manner, agreeably to their taste. Owa-gamy had a string round his head, stuck full of maccaw feathers ; over his back hung the tail of a fox. At each ear a racoon's tail ; round his waist was wrapped the skin of some beast, and a large bunch of shark's teeth at his breast, with other things I knew no name for. Komaloot's garb was much after the same fashion, except that he had a piece of looking-glass hanging at his breast by a red string. These I presume were dresses of ceremony. The ladies had little ornament on their heads, except a fine tuft of cotton on each side ; but round their necks hung many strings of shells, beads, and the like ; also round their arms and legs : and each had a small wrapper of cotton stuff round the hips ; the men a piece of baise ; the young boys without any thing.

Komaloot ordered one of the Indians to go down to the canoes, and bring up some things which they had brought for us. Among the rest was a valuable article indeed, no less than a pair of scissars, which was presented to Luta, a piece of looking-glass, a few rattles of calabashes for the child. Owa-gamy gave me another maschut. They likewise presented us with half a dozen mats, such as they use for sails, and to sleep on ; some very fine shells ; arrow-heads, made of a very hard green stone ; a few fish-darts ; one small hatchet ; some paddles, and a maccaw bird of most beautiful plumage. For these presents I returned them my hearty thanks, telling them that I was sorry I had nothing to give them in return. Upon my saying this, Owa-gamy laughed, and said, "What we give to our brothers and sisters, we never ask for again like children." Lama-atty inquired the name

of Patty's child. On being informed it had not a name, she desired it might have one given somewhat like hers. We therefore called her Matty.

I now began to take notice, that a young man, whose name was Soro-seet, or crab-catcher, kept constantly by Harry, and held long conversations with him. I asked if he was any way related to him. He said, up the side; and that this Indian remembered me very well, having seen me a long time before. This put me on the inquiry. Harry then made me understand, that he was the Indian's son I found on the Long-Key, at my first landing there from the schooner. I bid Harry ask him how they came to run away and leave me to starve for want? His answer was, that his mother's fears prevailed over every thing; I looked so fierce and savage in her eyes, that she could not bear the sight of me, and obliged his father to put off and leave me. To this I had no reply to make: her fears were natural; as an European, I might be justly dreaded by the more simple and unsophisticated Indian.

I now told my visitors, that the Great One had sent us a fine fish to regale them with. Harry and Toby went to bring it up; and in the mean time I had the new yabbas or pots of our making brought forth. When it arrived, they all assisted in cooking it, by cutting it into junks for a stew, roasting plantains, yams, &c. &c. We put on pots for beans, peas, and the like; so that upon the whole we had a sumptuous entertainment, though our company consisted of more than thirty persons. Toby waited. Our table was the bare ground. The ladies, by way of distinction, had the mats under them. When all were satisfied, Owa-gamy told Toby that he might return home again with them, for Padre Bastano

was now dead, and he had never been inquired for at all. Toby hearing this, gave me a side-look. I at once told him his abiding with us was only during his own pleasure—he was free to return whenever he thought proper. Upon this, Toby, casting his eye on the young girl in the company, called Matta-linea, or red fruit, asked whether she had a husband or not. This put the whole company in a roar of laughter. The girl looked like a fool, got up, and leaving her seat, went to the fire-side. Upon this, Toby cried out, "She no man—no man—Toby man." I asked him, if she chose to become his wife, whether it would be his wish to stay with us? Upon this he dropped upon his knees, and began a speech in his own tongue, as I supposed, that all the company should fully understand him. I desired Luta to translate it, as they all seemed much pleased with what he said. She did it thus—"I protest before all these my people, you, Penoly, to be my good friend and brother. So long as the sun gets up and goes to sleep, and his sister, the moon, comes after to give light in the night; when blackness covers the trees and the wide sea; when I am dead in my sleep, sick, or lame; and while I am able to shoot with an arrow, hunt or catch fish, dig yams or potatoes, fetch fruits, &c. &c. let me remain with you. But if Penoly say go, then Sama-lumy go with his people."

During this harangue the women were all in tears. There was something extremely affecting in the tone and manner in which he expressed himself.

It was now my turn to speak. I desired Luta to inform them, that I was very much pleased with the manners of the young man, (upon this they all gave a

loud "hah!") and it remained with him and Matta-linea to satisfy themselves and their friends.

They again interrogated Toby as to his inclinations, and he answered them as before—if the girl would stay with him as a wife, it would make him happy; he should then be always near me, learn my talk, and hear me speak about the strange things beyond the great water; but if Matta-linea would not consent to live with him, he would then go back with them to seek for a wife. Komaloot said, if she were willing, they could not answer to give her away, as she had a good father and mother; but that, on their return home, they would represent the matter to them, if the girl thought well of it.

Luta then spoke to her; she said, she would go home first. I asked Toby if he would go with her? he said, yes. So thus the subject was dropped for the present.

Among the things they gave us, was a piece of rough stone, resembling our grindstone, which became of great use to us for sharpening our tools. As we had now so many men with us, I proposed making a shed by way of kitchen. This was approved of, and all hands assisted in cutting down timber, and shaping uprights for the purpose, desiring I would give them the proper directions. I then began to lay out the ground, and judged that about forty feet by thirty would be sufficient for our purposes. When this was done, I appointed Harry, Toby, and four of their people, to the fishing department; the women were to stand cooks; the rest were employed with me in raising our new apartment; and in about five days we got it completely thatched in with palmetto leaves. In

the mean time my turtles went to pot freely, and we lived tolerably well upon the whole. We made a door at each end, and two openings in the top for the smoke to pass out.

Every thing being completed, they began to think of returning, having been with us twelve days. Toby went with them. We accompanied them as far as the Long Key. When we were about to part, Luta said, she wished one of the girls to stay and live with her, but was ashamed to ask the men. I told her she should have mentioned it to me before ; and perhaps the girl had no inclination to stay. Very much, she said, for she had no father or mother. Upon this, I hailed Owa-gamy off the point, and begged him to state the circumstance to his countrymen, as my particular desire ; which he did, and finding the girl willing, she was put into our boat. So Miss Iasa-wina, or the honey-sucker, returned back with us, after wishing her friends and countrymen a good voyage ; and I soon found the girl was as glad to stay with Luta as she was to have her. We gave her the name of Jessy.

We had not seen above half a dozen monkeys in all the time of my living here ; but after we had Indian corn we were pestered with them, particularly while it was in its green and tender state. It was some time before we found them out. The discovery was made as we were gathering squashes at the old ground. We saw twenty or thirty of them make off and mount the trees. How to remedy this evil was the question. As soon as I got home I went to work, and contrived a sort of wind-clapper, which I fixed on the top of a pole. This had the desired effect, and not one monkey was to be seen for some time after.

Mischievous as these animals were, they were at the

same time so diverting, that I have been extremely entertained with their droll humours. I have seen young ones sit on the limbs of trees, with ears of corn in their fore-paws, which they would husk as dexterously as we could do it. At other times an old monkey, seated on a branch with two young ones, would with great gravity give a corn to each as they sat by her side. Others would hand it over their shoulders to the young ones on their backs, being in all their motions like the human race. Then they would grin and chatter, and perform a thousand antics, which never failed to divert us by their drollery.

We had no account from our friends the Indians for a long time, so that I began to think Toby had deserted us entirely, or that something extraordinary had happened to prevent his return. One day as Harry and I were on the look-out, we heard a noise, as of people talking at a distance in the woods. Harry asked me if he should halloo out to them? I said, "By no means; if they are coming to us they know the road, therefore do you follow me down." In a short time after, Toby and two other Indians arrived, one of them his brother, called Yova-wan, or the paddle-maker, and Noona-waiak, or the dreamer, who had both been here before. They brought two guanos with them, and a sort of bird unknown to me. They asked for Luta and Patty, who soon came and welcomed them. We then prepared a good meal. I observed to Toby that I thought some accident had happened to him, or that he was determined never to return to us again. He shook his head, and then laying his hands on his knees, said, "Toby here now—know all trees here grow—want to see them one more time."

"But where is the wife?" said I.

"Oh, she see one to-morrow time."

As I observed him appear somewhat melancholy at this, I did not continue the conversation, and left him, taking it for granted that Luta would soon find out the cause of her not coming with him ; and indeed I was pretty right in my conjecture ; for she afterwards told me Toby had informed her, that when they got back the old people called a council, and were well disposed for it, but that her father would not give his consent that she should leave her home ; and finding the young people had a mind to each other, to prevent further inconveniency, they resolved to marry her to another, which they actually did. This affected him very much, and he was for a long time quite out of spirits ; till at length some of his neighbours came to visit him, and brought with them a fine girl called Rava, with whom he grew desperately enamoured. He made his proposals, and was accepted by her friends, that she should be his wife, if we would permit her now and then to visit them ; which Owa-gamy had given his word we would consent to. On this they promised to bring her to this place in canoes, observing, that his brother and Noona-waiak were to stay with us till she arrived. I asked when we might expect them ? He said, one moon and half moon, when cotton was done.

Harry now proposed to go again to the wreck. I told him she must be all to pieces before this time. However, he was bent upon the excursion ; and in two or three days after, Toby and his new messmate Noona-waiak went, leaving Yova-wan with us. They were absent four days, and the women began to be uneasy ; and to say the truth, I was not a little alarmed myself ; but on the fifth day I saw them coming round the point, to my great joy. They told me, as

an excuse for their long absence, that when they came to the place they could not find her ; that the two trees were gone, but the long tree which hung over the side was driven on shore in the bay. They added, they had found ten barrels on the sand, and had buried them. This pleased me much.

We now began to pay the bottoms of both canoes, and remained in expectation of seeing or hearing from our neighbours. The young men kept a sharp look-out every morning. I caused five of our turtles to be turned adrift, as they were become very lean, and were continually wasting for want of proper food, reserving two only against the return of our friends. Thus we went on from day to day. Our table was amply supplied with variety of fish ; and no new occurrence happened, till I found my seventh year wanted but a few days of expiring.

CHAPTER XII.

EIGHTH YEAR OF MY RESIDENCE.

HAVING now been on this shore full seven years, I told Luta we would hold a feast ; and ordered a turtle to be killed for the purpose. When it was brought home, I ordered them to get every thing ready, as plantains, yams, pepper, salt, &c. for that our feast would be the next day ; and in the mean time to go out and fish, as I expected we should have company enough to help us off with every thing that was provided. I said this quite in joke, not having the least

expectation of its being verified. But sure enough; as they were fishing the next day, they discovered canoes coming at a distance. They soon brought us the glad tidings, and Toby became quite another creature, having been for some time rather melancholy.

I now took my glass and went up the hill, and soon discovered three canoes coming in. I directly ordered our sailing-boat out, and to get the mast and sail ready; then dressed myself in my best attire, that is, my sombrero on my head, with two fine maccaw feathers stuck in it; my jacket made of tiger's skin, with the hair outwards; round my waist a belt of bass rope, in which hung my hatchet; at my back my bow and arrows, with a maschut in my hand. In this garb I seated myself abaft. Harry and Noona-waiak were my two mates. When they came near, I bid Harry sing; directly they began to answer. I now found them to be six men and three ladies, viz.—Owagamy, Futatee, Nocana-bar, Komaloot, Razua-bano, and Gayno-santo; Owa-gama's wife Lama-atty, the girl called Vina-quota, and Rava the bride.

The ladies were dressed and painted wonderfully fine, especially the bride. We escorted them all up the lagoon; and they were very much pleased to see our ladies waiting on the shore to receive them. When landed, we took them up to the castle. Toby seemed to be mightily rejoiced. He took Rava by the hand, and said some soft things to her; during which I had a full view of her person, and must confess she was the finest Indian girl I had ever seen. After they had conversed about an hour with our women, I asked Komaloot if all parties were fully agreed? He said they were. I then told them, by Harry, to make a circle round me; which they did. I called Toby and

bid him take the girl by the hand—then inquired her name, and was told it was Rava-ocuma, or Ravacuma. On this I joined their hands, and bid Luta tell them they were now man and wife, and made so in the presence of the Great Spirit who sees and knows all things; from this time their interests are the same, and they must be loving and dutiful to each other. When I had said this, they all began shouting and clapping their hands.

We now went all hands to feasting, and spent the remainder of the day in joy and mirth. The young couple were put to bed in the kitchen; and the next morning began to build a wigwam for themselves opposite to our dwelling. Our visitors staid with us a week, and then took leave in a very friendly manner, and returned home.

My family now stood thus:—Myself, Luta, and my son Owen; Harry and his wife Patty, with their daughter Matty; Toby and his new wife, and the Indian girl Jessy, being nine in number. We lived together in perfect love and amity; when, about six weeks after, fortune began to frown upon us. Luta was now near her time, and was soon delivered of another son; but she survived only a few days. My situation was now rendered truly deplorable. I was extremely fond of her. She was the most affectionate creature in the world. I thought my heart would break. Patty, who had not lost her milk, was obliged to become nurse to my infant. I gave it the name of Morgan. Poor Luta and I had lived together upwards of four years, in the most perfect conjugal harmony. A more loving, affectionate, and trusty wife and friend did not exist. My heart mourned for her.

As soon as I could muster up sufficient spirits, I

was under the hard necessity of preparing the funeral myself. The two lads attended me with heavy hearts too. Patty was almost distracted. She would not leave the corpse one moment. I desired them to dig a grave among the orange trees, and I attended myself to see it completed. They dug about five feet, then came to a hard rock, and were obliged to desist.

The scene was truly affecting. I sat at the head of the corpse, in a kind of mournful stupid mood. Poor little Owen would every now and then ask me when his mam would get up. Patty stood on one side with her child in her arms, silently weeping over the body. Ocuma and Jessy were like two creatures bereft of their senses, especially the latter, who did nothing but look at me and howl, for she loved her mistress greatly, who had a great affection for her.

Before my poor wife died, she desired me to sit down by her. I took her by the hand, which she pressed close to her bosom, and said she was then going to the old people of long times, and that it was her great desire, when she was fast asleep, that I would return back to my own country with her two children, if the Great One would let me go; and if I did, to say to my countrywomen not to be angry with her for keeping me there, as she was sure, had I been so much beloved by one of them, she would never have heard of me at all; for that, in that case, I should never have come so far for a poor Indian wife—yet she did not like to part; but it must be, the Great Spirit would have it so. I told her I would perform all her desires, if God would permit me. Overcome by my feelings, I was obliged to leave her for a short time, lest the violence of my grief should distress her. In about half an hour after, she ex-

pired, leaving her hand in the same posture as when I left her.

After she had been dead about thirty hours, I was obliged to give orders for her funeral. Patty and Ocuma bound up the corpse as decently as they could, by my directions. I told Harry to go to the head and Toby to the feet; they then lifted up the corpse. I took my poor boy in my hand; and the three females came behind, with the children in their arms. The body was laid into the grave. I lifted up my hands, and prayed to God to receive her innocent spirit, and to prepare mine to follow it with equal purity, relying on the mercies of my God and Saviour to forgive what was amiss.

I now made signs that they should cover the body with earth, which was done. But my poor heart was almost rent to hear the outcry of my poor little Owen, when he saw them covering his mother with the mould. I therefore desired them to take the children back, which they did without speaking a word. But presently the pent-up passion made its way, and the lamentation became general. I returned to the grave, and threw myself upon the earth, with my face to the sod, and gave full scope to my grief. I continued near an hour in this attitude, and then called my family before me, and addressed them thus:

“ You very well know, my good friends, how dear my poor Luta was to me, and the great regard she had for you all. You must be sensible how much your friend Penoly feels the loss of so good a woman; but you likewise know that death is common to all. The Great One has now taken away from me what I most loved. He has thought proper to try, and perhaps to purify me by this great affliction. It is my

duty to submit ; it is your duty to give me every consolation and assistance which my forlorn and helpless situation may require. It is now, that I am in trouble, that I shall try the sincerity of your attachment to me. Assist me with your endeavours to conquer my sorrow ; shew your affection to me by loving my children. They have, alas ! no mother now. You will always find me your zealous and faithful friend ; and I only expect from you a continuance of that attachment and regard which you have always shewn me on every occasion."

They had hitherto continued silent, but now one and all declared they would live and die with me, and at any time risk their lives to preserve mine. Before my poor wife's death, I had resolved, by her desire, to clip my beard with the scissors, but I determined now to let it grow.

Harry and Patty would frequently go and seat themselves at the grave for an hour or two, conversing together. After this sad event, I became very indifferent about every thing, except the care of my children ; and I must confess that Patty and Jessy used their best endeavours to discharge their duties to them too. Ocuma was as yet incapable of speaking English, and could only silently bemoan with me and the children.

CHAPTER XIII.

ABOUT a month after this had happened, Patty lost her daughter Matty. The child had been some time troubled with fits. We buried her by the side of my poor Luta. Our habitation became now quite melancholy ; so that I went out oftener than usual with one or other of the lads. It was on one of these excursions that we found a large lump of ambergris, as I judged it to be by the strong smell. I had never seen any of it in my life, but had heard its properties described. It weighed about one hundred and fifty pounds. We laid it by on a shelf of the rocks, placing aloe leaves about it. It was of a dark grey colour, but of not the least use to me ; though if transported to Europe it would have been of great value.

One day, as I entered my dwelling on my return from fishing, I found Harry and the girls very earnest over the flat stones I had inscribed with the names of the friends who had visited us. I placed them in a row above the child's reach, in order to preserve them, and had added one for poor Luta. On inquiring what they were about, Harry said, they were teaching them to talk. "How?" said I. "Oh," he replied, "we know who they all are very well." This I doubted ; but on making trial, was astonished to find they could call them all distinctly by their names. This shews a great strength of memory, as it was by some particular mark, colour, shape, or magnitude of the stone, or by the order in which they were arranged, that they were enabled to do this. Indeed I began to sus-

pect that the latter was the sole method by which they learned to repeat each particular name, and that it was done by the regular succession in which the stones were placed. I was resolved to prove this; and, sending them out on some pretence, I removed the stones from their places, and on their return tried them again. The result was the same as at first; the moment the stone was given to them, they would slightly examine it, and declare the name. They had therefore some more arbitrary and positive sign to assist their memory.

We had now a few days of very dirty weather, with the wind from the south-west, and great thunder, lightning, and rain. After this weather had subsided, it happened that Harry went to the top of the hill to make discoveries. I saw him running down towards me, open-mouthed, and crying out that there was a great ship coming to us. This put us all in a flutter and confusion. I ran up, and saw, sure enough, a large ship heeling on her larboard-side on the key-reef, with her head to the shore. She had colours out as a signal of distress. By the help of my glass I thought they were Dutch, but was not quite certain, as she was at least six miles distant from us in a direct line.

I began to deliberate how I was to act on this occasion. I was by no means certain that it was a Dutchman; but I recollect, of whatever nation they were, their present distress should command all my good offices. In the mean time the wind shifted, and began to fall. I ordered them immediately to get ready the boat, with fire-tackling, &c. I took a shirt out of my store, scanty as it was, and jumped on board with Toby. When we got to the point of our lagoon, we made up a good fire, and I fixed up my shirt as

a signal. We soon perceived a boat put off directly for us. We then got into our boat, and having thus made ourselves known, were resolved to leave the result to Providence. We returned back as speedily as possible. When I arrived at our dwelling, I dressed myself as I had done when the Indians came last, and took my little Owen with me into the boat. Harry seeing this, said they would come too. To which I consented, desiring him to arm himself first; which was soon done, and he came down to the point, bringing the women and children also. This vexed me, as I saw plainly he did not know what he was doing; but since it was so, I held my peace. I had quite sufficient to occupy my thoughts. We now all shewed ourselves at the fire. They shewed a white flag abaft, then a Dutch jack, and the white flag again. I was strongly agitated by hope, fear, and desire.

As they came near, I told Harry and Toby to follow me, and exactly to do as I did. We left the women and children by the fire, and, with my two messmates close behind me, I marched to meet them. When they came abreast of us, a man stood up in the boat, and hailed us. I clapped up my hands to my mouth, and answered 'halloo!' On this they pulled in for the shore, and there they lay on their oars to view us. I could plainly see the boat was Dutch built, and that there were nine men in her. Seeing them in suspense, I called, "From whence came ye?" They answered, but I could not understand them; and then came in to shore. A man jumped on the beach, and saying something to them, they put off from the shore again. He then called out to me, pulling off his cap at the same time. I returned the compliment, but could not understand him. After this I went up to him and held

out my hand, saying, an Englishman. Upon this he shook me heartily by the hand, and called out to his companions that they might come on shore, as I judged; for they all did, and gathered round me, looking at me with astonishment, then took me heartily by the hand. My lads seeing this, did the like; but still we were sadly puzzled, as not one of them could speak English. I gave them to understand, in the best manner I could, that I had been cast away like themselves, and had been on this shore above seven years. I found they could not understand this term of seven years, by their endeavouring to repeat it. They surveyed me from top to toe, lifting up their hands, and saying, "Ah! boor mon." Now I found they were sadly disappointed that they could not understand me; but a lad said, "Godart Somer Engele spraken en der schip." This brought them to good humour again; and I invited them to walk with me to our fire. This they complied with, so far as to accompany us along shore in their boat, and when opposite three of them landed again. No sooner did my people see them, than they ran off; but I called them back, and they came trembling with fear. One of the men asked me if they were my vrowen, as I thought. Then they said they would go to the ship and bring Godart Somer; but I made signs for them to go home with me, which they declined, but seemed to consent that one should stay, with which we were satisfied: we shook hands again, and they put off for the ship. When they were gone, I asked the man who remained with us, what his name was? He said Jan Brill. I ordered Toby to go out with the small canoe to catch some fish; and in the mean time walked the beach to and fro with Jan Brill. He sometimes talked to me, but I could very imperfectly understand him; and this

made him quite melancholy. We remained thus till Toby returned. Harry and Toby were now very anxious to give him a good meal ; but he did not seem very desirous of eating. Harry would now and then take him by the hand, and say he was like me, meaning that he had been cast away.

Some time after, we saw the boat go along-side, and about dusk they returned, and brought with them Godart Somer. As soon as they landed they brought him up to me. I was immediately struck with the appearance of this young man ; his countenance was familiar to me ; I was confident I had seen him before, but where I could not at once recollect.

I asked him from whence they came ? He said, "From the Texel ;" that their ship's name was Dertroost, bound to Buenos Ayres.

I desired him to inform me, if he had ever sailed out of England ?

"Yes," he said, "three voyages."

"Did you ever sail on board the Harrington of London ?"

He paused some time, then said, "No, neet, Ober Ich was on board dat schip. I been gone on shore en der Gravsend."

I directly knew him to be the person I took him for ; he was one of the supernumeraries put on shore at that place. They were all very much pleased with my recollecting him, and grew impatient for him to ask me questions.

"Did I know the coast well ?"

I told him, I was so far from knowing any thing of the coast, that I knew not where I was myself.

"Their skipper wished me to come on board ; would I consent ?"

I said, if they wished to be informed about the shoals

any where near my habitation, I was at the captain's service ; but as to my going on board, it could be of no use, and I would rather be excused, as I expected another squall from the same quarter ; it was my opinion the ship would never be got from that place, for that she was deep in the sand, and perhaps was bilged now. They were of quite a different opinion, and begged I would come off as early in the morning as I could, to point out to them some channel, if they could by any means haul her off. It now came on to rain again, and we soon lost sight of her ; the wind shortly after chopped about to the southward, and freshened up so, that I did not choose to remain where we were, with our little family. I then told them that I must return home, and if they chose to accompany me, I would make them as welcome as possible ; that I did not think they would get on board that night, without danger of filling, by the great sea which would soon set in if the wind should increase. They chose, however, to make the trial, and we parted.

At this time the wind began to be more violent, but when we got round the point we were as safe as in a mill-pond. They continued labouring at their oars for some time, while we were within the point ; and I was greatly troubled in mind, for if it should come on to blow hard their situation would be perilous indeed. The gale increased more and more, and at length I saw them pull round for the shore again. I directly landed Harry, and told him to run along shore and wait for them, then get into their boat, and pilot them in. This was soon done, and away they came after us. We soon all landed as wet as drowned rats. I showed them into the kitchen, and got a large fire made up to dry their clothes. They seemed very

much cast down, expecting a dreadful account of things the next morning.

I took Jan Brill and Somer up to my lodging, as thinking they might wish to have some conversation with me, for we had but little inclination for sleep during the whole night, but sat and talked without intermission. Poor Jan Brill wept very much, and was quite out of spirits. We got up early, and went to look out ; visited the kitchen, and found them all fast asleep and snoring, as if no misfortune had befallen them. I then called Oeuma, and bade her bring in some torches ; after Toby had fixed them, he began to kindle the fire. The wind was now abated, and towards the morning it fell stark calm.

I then proposed to Somer that he should awake the people, and go in search of the rest, as I told him I was certain they never staid by the vessel, for the sea would make a fair breach over her on that reef. This we agreed to, but when we came to rouze them, they seemed quite ignorant of their situation, and acted and talked like men beside themselves, running against the thatch, and asking ridiculous questions, as Somer informed me ; but a little recollection soon brought them to their senses again.

I ordered Harry to get our canoe ready to go with me. This was about four in the morning, and away we all went, leaving Toby with the wemen. When we got some distance out, we saw the ship had swung round and lay on her beam ends ; no boat appeared to be near her. Jan Brill then wrung his hands like a man in despair. Somer wished me to go on board with him, and to come into their boat ; this I did, and we put the canoe to a killick. We then rowed away for the vessel ; presently Somer called out in Dutch that he

saw their long-boat. I soon discovered her myself, and people walking on a point above the old cave ; on this we got head round and pulled away for them. When we came in with the beach, I saw five men, who all ran and showed much gladness to see their shipmates again. Jan Brill then asked for the skipper ; they said he was resolved to stay by the ship, with five more, and whether they had survived this dreadful night or not they could not tell.

There was now no time to be lost, so off they put for the ship, but soon returned, saying there was not one soul alive or dead on board ; they had searched every where. I asked Somer which was the mate, and he pointed him out to me. I went and shook hands with him, and desired Somer to inform him, that I wished them all to return back with me to my dwelling, and there we would hold a council on what was first to be done, as the ship was lost beyond the possibility of recovery. While I was speaking, I observed one man who went up the beach and seated himself on the grass, to lament his wretched fate, as I judged ; but to my great surprise, I saw him very deliberately take out of his pocket a pipe and pouch of tobacco, fill his pipe, and drawing out a small tinder-box, he struck fire, lighted it, then with much composure clasped his two arms round his shins, and began puffing away, as if no earthly thing gave him the least discontent.

They soon came to a conclusion, and we all put off for the old cave, landed, and got a parcel of roots, and the only turtle we had in store ; then put Harry on board his canoe, and returned to our place, with fourteen of the crew, being all that were left alive. I had now enough upon my head, to provide for so great an addition to my family, and for an unlimited time. I

had likewise to consider, that, from their superior force, if they chose to take full possession of my habitation, and exclude me from it, they had the power so to do. I asked Somer what was the mate's name? he told me it was Jacob Van Tulden; upon this I welcomed him to my castle, as an asylum from present misfortunes, and hoped that he would use his authority to protect our females from any insult from the crew. This Somer told him in Dutch privately; he at once shook me by the hand, promising to do every thing in his power to preserve peace and good order. As these people spoke a language unknown to us, our females from alarm kept themselves quite aloof. Mr. Van Tulden observing the colour of my children, asked me which of the females was my wife. I bade Somer tell him that I had lost my wife, and the two girls they had seen were the wives of my two friends who lived with me. We now prepared the best entertainment in our power, and sat down all together, except the women and children.

Godart Somer was the general interpreter. I convinced him how necessary it was that arrangements should be made to secure provisions for so great a number, and that each should take his share in the labour for that purpose; for which reason, I must beg they would submit to my directions, or we should soon find ourselves in a starving condition. Van Tulden and Brill, who I found was the boatswain, said this was but reasonable; they represented it to the people, and all promised compliance. We now began to appoint our different stations. The mate, Somer, and myself, with five others, were to go in the long-boat to the vessel; others were sent to cut wood; Jan Brill and Toby were to stay behind and guard the women and

children, while Harry and another party were to provide us with a dish of fish.

When things were thus adjusted, we prepared to go off to the ship ; the weather was as calm as a clock, so that in two hours we got along-side of her with ease. The first thing that struck my eye, was a yellow or tortoise-shell cat running along the windward side, mewing in a sad manner. The ship we found bilged, and all the lower tier under water, above a foot or two. The mate sent some of them down into the steerage, where they remained for some time. I desired Somer to inform the mate, that I was very certain there were no inhabitants except Indians for many leagues along this coast. My advice was, to secure as much as possible from the wreck, for their own use, before the natives came to the knowledge of it, as they would immediately come down and plunder it of every thing. He seemed alarmed at this. We then went down into the cabin, where we found every thing gone to leeward, and capsized in a confused manner ; but what was singular, little water was to be seen abaft ; this I attributed to her being so high in that quarter, and she was more by the head also. The rest of the hands I found were got into the hold, and as they came on deck were all in liquor ; but as all were become masters now, and nobody left to throw the water out of the long boat, as the sailors term it, I had not a word to say, but to provide as well as possible against the consequences of such conduct in future. The mate found a keg of gin in the steerage, and took a small sup, then handed it to me, but I declined it. Just then, casting my eyes round, I espied one of those precious things called a biscuit, which I eagerly snatched up, and said aloud, " God be praised ! "

then took a bit, tasting of bread once again, after above seven years' abstinence, from hard necessity. Observing that Somer began to be somewhat intoxicated, I chid him for it, saying, they did not know how precious their time was ; and if they did not make the most of the calm weather they might lose every thing, and begging them likewise to recollect how soon the Indians might be down. He took this kindly, and told the rest what I said, and they seemed to be a little more on their guard after this. Somer likewise informed the mate that there were two of the people dead in the forecastle, as they told him. I said, these were probably miserable examples of that excess they all seemed so ready to indulge in, and thinking death inevitable, had taken their fill of liquor, to drown all thoughts of danger ; their names he said were Verwill and Poerson.

After this, I begged Somer to ask the mate to look for some paper for me, if any could be come at. "Paper," he said, "dere is more as one boat load on board de ship ;" with this I was much pleased. I desired him to mention it to Van Tulden ; who, as soon as he could be made sensible of my desire, took the hint, and running forward by the mast, clapt his hand on a large bale of it. Seeing me so elevated at this, he took his knife and began to cut it open, which produced a great treasure of this article ; then going aft into his cabin, procured me a bottle of ink, as I thought. I got these things stowed very carefully in the boat. He then went to work again in the cabin, and got a parcel of clothing, several guns and pistols, some bedding, and other things ; then brought a quadrant and compass ; the people got out two barrels of beef, some bags of bread, with three kegs of

gunpowder, and some brandy and gin. We put off with this cargo for the first time, and returned home quite safe. We found our females were now less terrified than before, which was owing to Brill's good conduct. The mate now began to reflect with himself, that he had forgotten to search for the log-book, to bring shot, bullets, and other things, which would be of great use to us. They made another trip to the wreck the next morning by day-light. I remained at home. They returned about the same time in the evening as before, with a full cargo. This was repeated daily, till the ship was partly unladen, and we had a prodigious store of various articles. The wind now came round to the north, and blew so fresh, there was no venturing out, and the sea beat in full on her upper works.

I forgot to mention, that the cat jumped into the boat as we came off the first trip; and no sooner did we reach the shore, than she flew to the fish garbage, and devoured it so greedily, that she was unable to quit the place, till nature, being so overcharged, threw it off and relieved her, or she must have died on the spot.

After every thing had been taken from the ship that could be come at, they began to consult what should next be done. In this council I could give no advice, as I knew no more of the coast than a child; I therefore left them to follow their own opinions.

CHAPTER XIV.

WHILE these matters were in agitation, we were much troubled with the disorderly conduct of some of the men. Van Tulden and the boatswain did every thing in their power to keep them within bounds ; but there was such a quantity of liquor, it was impossible to keep them sober, and as impossible to control their conduct when intoxicated. Van Tulden privately advised me to secure some of the liquor for my own purposes, as the loss to those who were so intemperate in the use of it would be of general benefit. I profited by this advice, and conveyed away four anchors of brandy, and a few kegs of gin, which, by the assistance of Harry and Toby, I properly secured from their knowledge, while they were sleeping.

It was at length concluded, that they should go to the southward in the long-boat, and leave the yawl with me. I asked them where they intended to touch first ? They told me Puerto-bella, if they could reach it. They intended to keep in-shore along the coast. " What latitude did they think we were now in ? " They said, as they judged, about 11° and $30'$ north. " What did they conceive to be the name the country bore ? " They believed it was Costa Rica.

I desired Van Tulden to leave the date of the year and day of the month, as I was ignorant in that respect. He then asked me for the bottle he had given me. I ordered Harry to fetch it. Some sort of pen was then to be provided. I was under the necessity of borrowing a feather from one of my parrot's

wings for this purpose. He desired Harry to get a little water in a shell. When it was brought, he took the bottle and emptied out of it a small quantity of greyish powder, and mixing it in the shell with his finger, produced ink.

N. B.—This was the first ink-powder I had ever seen. .

He then told me that Somer should speak it in English, or I should not understand his writing ; but perhaps it would be better for me to write it myself, which I did thus—“ Monday, the fifth day of the month of August, in the year one thousand seven hundred and fifty-four.” So that I found, in my reckoning I had somehow or other missed about six weeks ; but this was a matter of little moment to me.

A very untoward circumstance now occurred. There were two men belonging to the crew who were absolute brutes—void of gratitude, humanity, and every other principle that should distinguish man from the creatures beneath him. Their names were Claess Decker and Adam Brandt. These two profligates tried to pick a quarrel with me, and demanded the liquor which they said was missing. No argument had any effect with them. Brandt ran about, raving and swearing like a madman. I offered to restore the liquor. The rest of the crew insisted I should not by any means ; for I had been a true friend to them, and it would only be doing an injury to the whole if I did, whereas it might at some future time be of much service to me. About half an hour after this, as Van Tulden and Jan Brill were sitting at victuals with me, we heard the report of a pistol. We jumped up immediately ; I took up a maschut, and they each of them a pistol, and out we ran. The noise came from

the cook-room, as I thought. The women were frightened, and running up the hill with the children, screaming dreadfully. My blood began to mount. I flew to the kitchen ; but just as we entered another pistol was fired. We then ran back, not knowing what to do ; when out rushes Somer like a fury, with a pistol in his hand. We all three stood on our defence. He at once called out to me, in broken English, "Never mind, skipper, never mind, dat devil is gone pon hell now." "For God's sake, Somer," said I, "are you mad too? Tell me what is the matter at once, or I will cut you down." "Vel den, dat devil Brandt, he vill say Toby hites da chin. He say, Toby say, need him dout ; dan dis hell-son he shoot him in von minuet. Ont dat I rones and plows out his pranes, and dat is all." We ran into the kitchen, and found poor Toby weltering in his blood. I stood like a man thunderstruck.

Now all was noise and confusion. The mate and boatswain then called Somer and me out to the people, who were all in an uproar. They asked who were on our side? Immediately one and all came over to us, even Decker himself, through fear, I suppose, now his companion was no more.

I was afraid there was some conspiracy ; but upon inquiry it was found to be quite a sudden thing, and no plot at all, but that the whole was occasioned by the wretch Brandt's jealousy that Toby had hid the spirits. He, poor fellow, innocently lost his life, to my very great grief.

Every one commended Somer for what he had done ; and when matters were a little quiet, I gave orders for the burial of my poor unfortunate and faithful friend. He was laid close by my wife. Ocuma would

not be seen, but shut herself up. All my pleadings had no power over her. She remained in the back part of my dwelling for two whole days. At length, by great intreaty, we got her out; but she was so emaciated, it was quite pitiful to look at her. I thought it best to let her have her own way. I knew she had lost a very sincere friend, and I one of the sweetest-tempered creatures I had ever met with. Often have I shed tears on the grave of my faithful Toby.

Some of the people talked of burying Brandt; but I absolutely forbid it, saying no murderer's bones should defile the ground near my peaceful habitation. The majority then agreed that he should be sunk off at sea for sharks' meat; and this was accordingly done.

They now talked of leaving my shore, and offered me a place in the long-boat, which I declined, thanking them for the kindness of their offer. I said, as I had two young children left to take care of, it became my duty, as a father, to provide for them. Should I leave them now, they would become untutored savages, and their defects and deficiencies would be justly chargeable to me, and I should deserve the severest punishment from heaven for neglecting them.

Peace being again re-established, the mate called me aside, with Brill and Somer, and said they had been talking to him on a subject which nearly concerned Somer.

"Well," said I to Somer, "if I can be of any service to you, speak."

"Yes," he said, "I been saying mit Mr. Van Tulden, dat you do me mush good."

"In what way can I serve you?"

"Ick sal stay here mit you, unt liven mit you, you will please. Ick ben much feared for Decker, he put me von chail, ven ick sal comen in Holland; unt dat you know, Van Tulden."

I asked Van Tulden if he consented? To which he replied, "Yes."

I then inquired of Somer, whether he had a wife or children? If he had, it would be better for him not to remain with me, but to retire to some other part of the world, where there was a possibility of providing for his family. He said he had none to care for but himself; and that he was no way inclined to run headlong into danger, while it was in his power to prevent it. "Well then," said I, "shipmate, since it is so, I shall be proud to have you for my companion; you may therefore acquaint your old friends with your resolution, and that, from this time, you and I have one and the same interest; you may consider yourself as fully out of Decker's power, and set his malice at defiance."

The mate then called Brill the boatswain, and they both shook me by the hand, and told Somer, "whatever of their stores was not of immediate necessity to them, they would leave behind for our use." I thanked them very heartily, acknowledging, whatever they should think proper to leave with us, we should consider ourselves under the greatest obligation to them for. They said I deserved every thing from them, and wherever they went, they should bear my kindness in remembrance; and if they lived to return to Holland, would report my Christian-like behaviour to their owners.

Van Tulden desired Godart Somer to call all the men together. He then retired inwards—seated him-

self at my table—took pen, ink, and paper, and drew up a sort of protest in Dutch—read it over to them, and they all put their names to it. The substance of it was, that after the loss of the ship, with Captain Meert and part of the crew, they very providentially met with an Englishman, who had been shipwrecked on the same coast several years before, and he had been, under Providence, the means of preserving their lives, and gave them every relief and assistance in his power. He asked them if they were willing to put their names to it? They all answered, “Yaw, yaw, yaw,”—and heartily and kindly shook hands with me all round. The names of those who signed were as follow:—Jacob Van Tulden, Jan Brill, Adam Oest, Harman Byvank, Wouler Meyer, Albert Dubbels, Godart Somer, Claess Decker, Peter Bylert, Cornelius Deman, Teysen Willems, Davit Oert, and Joust Van Drill, a boy.

I begged that Somer might translate it, that I might have a copy to keep by me; which was done agreeably to my desire. Van Tulden then mentioned to them the affair of Somer's remaining with me. They were very well pleased, and thought he was much in the right so to do; though what he had done in respect to Brandt was no more than common justice, as he was a villain and a murderer, and brought his death upon himself.

After this they began to make ready as fast as possible, having fitted up the long-boat to the best advantage for their run, and got on board all they could conveniently stow. The carpenter, Adam Oest, had caulked her afresh, and she was quite tight and trim: they only waited for a favourable wind to commit themselves once more to the ocean. About three days after it came round to the north-east, and they began

to muster all hands, being twelve in number. I told Somer to speak to the mate, and tell him, that it was my particular request he would do me the favour not to mention any thing concerning my being on the coast, when they came among the Spaniards, as he well knew my reasons for making this request ; that he would likewise not fail to forward my letter to my mother by the very first opportunity. All this he faithfully engaged to do.

As they were just upon their departure, I summoned all my family. Van Tulden saluted the women and children with tears in his eyes, shook hands with Harry, and all the crew followed the example. After which, turning to me, he offered to put a few pistoles into my hands, which I refused, and bid Somer inform him, that I should think myself almost as bad as Brandt should I accept them ; they could be of little use to me in my situation, but they might prove of most essential service and benefit to them where they were going. He then laid his arms over my shoulders, and said, " You ben von good vriend, mynheer." Then turning to my old shipmate Somer, said something in Dutch, and dropt on his knees. I took the hint, and as they all knelt, I made a sign to my people, and we joined them. By his manner he seemed to me very devout. They began to sing a psalm or hymn, and when they had done they all got up, and took their leave of me and my family in a very hearty and affectionate manner. Just as they were stepping on board, I called for a large bottle they had given me, and made them all take a parting drop of brandy with me. They then shoved off, and we gave them three cheers. They began to row away down the lagoon, and we ran up the hill to see them out.

When they got so far out as to give the reef a good birth, they bore away before it, and in about two hours we lost sight of them, as they doubled a point. From the time of their first landing, they were with us about three weeks, and took their departure on Friday the 30th of August, 1754. I must candidly confess, that except Brandt and Decker, they had all behaved during their stay with us like honest and quiet men. While they continued at my dwelling, I made all the women sleep in the interior part, as a necessary precaution, having observed some of the men a little too fond of Jessy; but Ocuma kept a keen eye over her, by my direction.

I now began to think it necessary to make some new regulations in my family. Toby was dead, and Somer, who remained with me in his room, might not altogether be so tractable. The principal authority must be vested in one, and a due subordination established among the rest. My own experience told me, that I was the proper person to support this dignity for the benefit of the whole community. I explained this to Somer, with my reasons. He was fully satisfied, and promised most implicit obedience to my will; to which he said he was inclined, not more by his interest than his inclination. I particularly stated to him, that he must know I was much better acquainted with the manners and dispositions of the Indians than he could possibly be; and as most likely we should be visited by them soon, he must be particularly attentive to my instructions as to his behaviour and conduct towards them; he might depend that I would make every thing as easy to him as possible, and be his friend on every occasion. I was pleased to see that he had obtained already the sincere attachment of

Harry, which was proved by his readiness in revenging the death of his countryman and friend on that brutal murderer Brandt. He promised due submission to me in every thing—acknowledged himself a stranger, and indebted for support and protection to my humanity and kindness. I then desired him to take Harry as an assistant, and fit up for himself a good birth in the kitchen to sleep in.

N. B. I had long made it a regulation in my family to set aside the seventh day as the Sabbath, a day of rest and thanksgiving; I mean of rest from every thing but necessary labour: and I explained to those of my household, in the most simple and plain manner possible, the reason of this institution; and from the natural infirmities of our nature, and the many accidents to which we were daily exposed, how necessary it was to deprecate the Divine wrath,—to supplicate the Almighty to assist us with his power to regulate our lives according to his will, and to give us strength and courage to support ourselves under the trials we might meet with in our daily progress,—to worship him and to praise him for the benefits we received, and the comforts we enjoyed, and more particularly for the security and protection he had been pleased to afford us on this desert shore.

I now resolved to take Ocuma to be my wife, and hastened to make this declaration, lest Somer might anticipate my inclinations by a similar proposal. I took the first opportunity of giving Patty notice of my intentions, and desired her to communicate them to Ocuma in her own language, as she had not sufficient knowledge of English to understand me. After this, in about an hour Patty returned, and called me aside; she told me that Ocuma expressed her readiness to do

all I would have her, if I thought her good enough ; and that she would willingly serve me and my children with all her heart. "Then tell her to come to me," said I. She did as I desired, and brought her. I then summoned the rest of my family ; and when they were assembled, I took Ocuma by the hand, and declared before them all, that I took her to be my wife, and mother to my children. They all expressed the greatest joy on this occasion, and thus I became a married man again.

The ship shewed herself above water for a long time after this, and Somer went with Harry now and then to bring off what they could find from her. My new friend acted in all respects as became his condition ; but one morning he came in and informed me, that he saw five Indians coming down the hill, and immediately caught up his gun. "What are you at?" said I ; "there is no fear ; they are my very good friends ; but go and call Harry and his wife here."

The Indians now approached, and when they observed another white man in my company, they halted ; I beckoned, and they advanced, saluting me in a very kind way. These Indians were Vinne-quote, or the smoker, and brother to Ocuma ; Selacato, or a joyous person, conducted hither by Owa-gamy ; Futee and Noona-waiak, my old friends.

Owa-gamy asked directly for Luta. Upon this, I withdrew to a distance, leaving Harry to explain the melancholy story, which took up almost an hour, all which time I kept out of sight. When I returned, I seated myself alone. I had no sooner done this, than my three friends came all to me, and shewed the greatest tokens of compassion, in plain and unfeigned expressions of condolence. Then they all hugged Somer,

as if they would have eaten him. They told Harry, they were well pleased to learn that I had taken poor Toby's widow to be my wife, as it was a proof of the regard I had for him; they said it was the custom with them to do the same among friends. They likewise informed us, that they had seen a boat full of white men pass by their shore. Harry told them, they were messmate Somer's friends. When they heard this, they said, had they known it, and they had landed among them, they should have used them kindly for our sakes; observing, that as I had treated their people so well on every occasion, it was their duty to do the same by mine. Owa-gamy, continuing this conversation, added, that good firm friends were to be compared to a strong man, whose two arms assisted each other to fight and defend the body from injuries, while his two legs were the mutual supporters of his body, in standing, walking, running, &c. I answered, that Somer and I were greatly beholden to him and his people, and should on every occasion do our utmost to deserve the continuance of their friendship.

Owa-gamy desired me not to be cast down; saying, that as to my loss, he thought I was well recompensed, for the spirit of Luta was now centred in the heart of Ocuma, and the fidelity of Toby repaid by the attachment of my new friend Somer, who shewed himself to have a good spirit, when he revenged the death of that good creature. He then made a remark on the practice of drinking strong liquors, and said, perhaps our people did not use the same caution as the Indians, when they took fool's water, the name given to spirits. On such an occasion, it was their constant rule to lay aside their arms, and give them into the keeping of some particular person, lest they should

become as foolish as the water was itself, and should revenge the deaths of their old fathers, a thousand moons ago.

The Indians staid with us four days, and I gave each of them a piece of woollen cloth, which we had brought from the wreck. Somer desired Harry to ask if they would bring some tobacco the next time they paid us a visit? They said we should have enough, and then left us.

Shortly after they were gone, Ocuma asked Harry, if Somer was not younger than me? I desired him to inform her that he was my elder, and that she would soon see his beard as long as mine for want of a razor. This put me upon trimming mine with my scissors. My whiskers were now become quite formidable. Harry plucked his out by the roots, after the fashion of his country.

We had now collected a large quantity of goods from the wreck, and it took us two days to stow them away to the best advantage. I used sometimes to dress myself up in Dutch clothes to divert the Indians. We had likewise a store of strong liquors, though I was often sorry we had a drop, as I found Harry grow too fond of it; but I thought of a scheme to spoil his relish for it. One day, while he was absent, I conveyed a quantity of groupar slime into a bottle, and then filled it with brandy and gin mixed; I then put it out of sight till an opportunity should offer; which I did not wait for long. Soon after he asked me for some. I told him, if he loved it so much, it would make him hate his best friends; it should only be used in case of sickness; so a very small quantity served him this time; but before night, he complained of being sick. "What, very sick?" "Yes, very sick," he said. I then gave him the bottle, and desired, when he

had taken the quantity he liked, that he would go to sleep. This went off very well ; I knew what I had to expect. As he did not make his appearance for some hours, I sent to inquire how he was. I found he was fast asleep, and so he continued during the evening. After I had been on my bed for some time, Patty came with a torch and awakened me ; she said Harry was very sick, very sick indeed. The gleam of the lamp upon her sombre countenance, and the cavern partially illumined by its rays, gave the whole scene the appearance of the operations of witchcraft. I got up, however, to save appearances, and affected much concern. The women were all in tears, and Jessy ran to call Somer. No sooner did he come, than, like a true Dutchman, he cried out, “Der tivel, dat fellow is tronken, is tronk, dat is all.” And indeed the poor devil had taken such a quantity, that I began to be fearful of the consequences ; he had almost finished the whole bottle, and it had worked him at such a rate, that he could scarcely hold up his head. The next morning he began to come to a little, but was very stupid and sick. I asked him if he would have a little more of the good stuff ; he shook his head, turned away, and said nothing. I let him continue thus for some time, and then renewed my lecture. I pointed out to him the consequences of such excess ; suppose it had made him as mad as it had made Brandt, and in his drunken fit he had thought proper to shoot me, as Brandt did Toby. I found this was enough ; he fell down at my knees, and said, “No, no, good brother Penoly, the Great One make me sick, purpose to make me sorry, make me hate fool’s water ; no take more, never, never ;” and away he ran. From this day I could entirely trust him, as he would not touch it ; therefore of this article we had plenty without use.

I will now mention the behaviour of our Indians, when they saw me begin to write my Journal. They would gather round me, and whisper to each other ; and if they crowded me too much, if I did but put my pen towards them, they would jump back quite terrified. One day as I was reading it over to Somer, Harry said, that now he was sure I was a very cunning man, for I could make all my old words speak again quite new, and that I could make dead people talk.

“ How so ? ” said I.

“ Did not I hear what sister Luta talk to Mr. Somer just now, and she is in the grave yonder ? ”

This made me smile, and I told him I would make little Owen do as much soon.

“ Ay, ay,” said he, “ when he got beard like you.”

Sometimes he would touch the point of the pen, and say, “ No wonder birds talk so well, when so many feathers talk in their wings.”

I found it very difficult to make my knife sharp enough to make pens. My pens too were not of the very best quality, being from turkey, buzzard, and from hawk and bald eagles.

After we became more settled, I asked Somer one day where he was born ? He told me at Middleburg in Zealand. “ Do you not remember Peter Cass, and George Nielson, your countrymen, on board the Harrington ? ” said I. “ Yes,” he replied, “ very well.” I then told him Cass died at Kingston that same voyage. One word brought on another ; and talking of the wars, he said it was now peace between England, France, and Spain. I asked him how long ? He said in the year 1748 peace was made. This made me rejoice, as thinking if the Spaniards should find me now, I might expect more favour from them.

I was a long time at my Journal, day by day, before I could bring it to this period of time. What has preceded, has been collected as I could best remember; but I persuade myself nothing of any note has escaped, as I was very careful to retain what I thought worthy of notice. But I must observe, in respect to Indian information, the spelling their names and the like, I may not be quite exact. A man, to give the true pronunciation to their words, should be born among them. Neither is it possible in any language precisely to copy their ideas, and the manner of conveying them.

CHAPTER XV.

NINTH YEAR OF MY RESIDENCE.

My ninth year now commenced. The last had been a very busy year. It was now the 15th June, 1755. Somer and I were sitting by the light of a torch, telling old stories, and reciting the adventures of our youth, when he was suddenly struck over the eye by a very large beetle, which gave him extreme pain. These beetles I had seen frequently in the woods in the evenings, some of them as large as a hen's egg, and of a dark-green colour. They have a long kind of forceps, like the claw of a crab, set with fine teeth, with a black polish, very bright and shining. With these forceps they lay hold of the young twigs of trees, such as they can grasp, then expanding their wings, begin to whirl about round the branch with great force and velocity, and by that means

cut the bark through to the sap ; then by hanging under, they suck it in. Our females at times used to produce a sort of music with two or three of them ; they made them fast to long strings, as our children do chaffers, and then hung them up in the cavern passage, where they would spin round, and it was surprising to hear the sounds they made ; sometimes like the deep pipes of an organ, according to the magnitude of their wings, and they would sometimes strike chords most sweetly. Poor Somer's eye was not well for a week or more ; but by the Indian method of cure it was quite restored again.

Being on the subject of insects, I shall now describe a kind of ants which are very common here. They are of a dirty white colour, and of a shape very different from other ants. They build their nests in the limbs of trees, old stumps, and rocks ; the nest is as large as a bee-hive, and of a consistency like coarse brown bread. From this nest, or general commonwealth, they have generally three or four high roads, composed of the same substance. These roads are arched over, and of the size of a man's little finger, so that all their works are deeds of darkness. They never fail to have one of these paths lead to the water, and if at any time accident should damage this causeway, which they lead up and down the bodies of trees, rocks, and the like, they at once repair the breach again ; but the matter of which they compose it, is not of the same colour when new, being then grey. Should you break any part of this road, you will soon see two or three ants make their appearance, but retire back again, as if to make their report ; then incontinently comes forth a multitude, in the greatest hurry and confusion imaginable. Yet if you watch, they all forsake it again, leaving the

breach as it was ; but if you retire, and visit the place the next morning, you will find it fully repaired. But should you break it down a second time, in that case they will not repair it as before, but they carry it round circular, or in a large curve, somewhat altering the path, and then join it as before. The Indians say, the nest burnt to ashes is good for many disorders ; but of this I know nothing. They are very destructive, which I know by experience, as in one night they ate off one of the uprights of my table, and their bite gives most excruciating pain ; therefore whenever we discovered a road leading our way, we constantly routed them by that general destroyer, fire.

How often have I soothed my melancholy thoughts in this solitude, by contemplating the divine works of the Almighty Framer of the world. In these moments I felt myself humbled, but not degraded. I could not explain the mysteries of creation, nor lift up the impenetrable veil which Divine Wisdom had interposed to restrain human pursuits within proper limitation. But I felt myself a reasoning being, dignified by an intellectual capacity superior to the animals around me. I could trace events up to their causes, and derive consequences from remote relations, by a faculty finer than instinct ; a faculty which seemed to unite me to the Divine Author of my being, in whose image I was formed.

How often did I wish to have the associate of my youth, Bill Falconer, with me, to explore these beauties, and to record them in his sweet poetry ; but, alas ! I parted with him in Old England, never perhaps to meet more in this world. His may be a happier lot. Led by a gentler star, he may pass through this busy scene with more ease and tranquillity than has been the

portion of his humble friend Penrose. And though, when time or accident may destroy this mortal body, my bones may be destined to whiten the unfrequented desert, may thine, my gentle friend, rest in peace in the sepulchre of thy fathers! It is my duty to submit to the dispensations of Providence; and, in the contracted circle in which I live, contentedly and cheerfully to administer to the comforts and necessities of those around me.

My messmate Somer often expressed his regret that he was not furnished with a pipe of tobacco. This was a difficulty I knew not how to surmount. I had some old stuff by me, but from length of time it could be of no use; but even if it were, what were we to substitute for a pipe? He observed there were pipes enough on board their ship, but we never saw any. I told him if he and Harry could find out any thing that would answer the end of tobacco, I would provide him with a pipe. He then consulted Harry on the subject; the Indians frequently smoked whilst they were with us, but the tobacco was rolled into segars, such as were used by the Spaniards. Harry said he knew a plant that was often used as a substitute for tobacco, and they soon procured some. I then bid him knead up some clay very fine; this I rolled round a wire, and then contrived a bole, somewhat rude, I confess, but such as would answer the purpose. We then burnt it, and from this rude essay Somer made a kind of mould with his knife; and from this time we were not in want of pipes, such as they were.

Somer was extremely pleased with this contrivance, and seemed to speak with more content and spirit with the pipe in his mouth. Harry and I began to practise

likewise, and in a short time became very notable smokers. Now and then Somer and I used to indulge ourselves very sparingly with a drop of liquor ; but Harry could not be persuaded to touch it.

I now began to instruct my little Owen in the alphabet. I made the letters plain and distinct, in the best manner I could, with my pen. During this occupation, the rest of my family would sit round me ; so that they all learnt a little. I would now have given a thousand dollars, if I possessed them, for a Bible ; but it was not to be had. Little Owen could repeat the Lord's Prayer without missing a word ; and perhaps was the first of the Indian natives on this coast who could do it in the English language.

Thus I used to pass my time. Sometimes with my gun, but this was seldom, as we had no great store of shot ; at other times, writing, fishing and the like. Somer employed himself in making a mast and sails for the yawl ; and when he had done, we got her keel up, and payed her bottom with tar, pitch, and sand, thinking it would keep out the worm, and we found it answer the purpose tolerably well.

In comparing my present state with what it had been, I found myself very comfortably settled ; but my tranquillity was soon disturbed by the discontent of my companion Somer. He began to alter his carriage towards me,—he would take his pipe and retire to a distance, and remain absent an hour or two at a time. I observed this some time before I mentioned it to him ; and finding that he continued in the same sulky mood, I was resolved to have a serious talk with him on the subject. Therefore, one evening I proposed to him to take a trip over to the Long Key—perhaps we might find some things drifted on shore from the wreck. He

said, "With all my heart." "Well, then," said I, "Harry shall get the boat ready to-night; we will take our guns and lines, and Swift shall go with us." This pleased very well, and the next morning we put off, with our pipes in our mouths. I put a small quantity of brandy in the boat, and left Harry governor at home, with orders, that if any thing should chance to happen to require our presence, he was to hoist a piece of an old ensign which we had preserved from the wreck.

Soon after we arrived at the key, as we were walking towards the point, Somer cried out with an oath, "Dere is von schip comen." "Avast swearing, shipmate," said I; "in what quarter do you see her?" "Dere, see mit mine finger." I took out my glass and discovered a small sloop standing to the westward. I told him it was a Spaniard bound down the coast, and could be of no consequence to us, as she would touch no where near us. "This is what I fear," said he; "I wish she would; you don't want to leave this place and these Indian women, but would live here for ever." Just as I was about to reply, he took notice that our signal was out. I immediately prepared to return, thinking that the vessel perhaps was not the only cause; when he found this, he said somewhat sharply, "What, will you not stay to see how the ship steers?" "Not I indeed," I replied; "I am sure she does not intend to speak with us." With that I got into the boat, and he followed, muttering between his teeth. The moment we were seated, I addressed him thus:

"I perceive plainly, Mr. Somer, that you are not disposed to reconcile yourself to the will of Providence; it gives me much concern to observe your restless and unquiet disposition, under such inflictions as it hath

pleased the Almighty to lay on you. What do you want, that a reasonable being in such a situation might not do without? Had you been cast on this shore as I was, destitute of every thing, naked almost, and without hope of assistance, with nothing to support nature but a few shell-fish, which were to be eaten raw; without a fellow mortal to converse with, and with the continual expectation of being knocked on the head by the savages, or devoured by wild beasts,—you might then have complained, but you must have submitted. How different has been your situation! Think on this, and you will see the extent of your ingratitude to a good God, who has preserved you; who has spread for you a table in the wilderness, and provided you with food, with raiment, and with human society, to comfort and relieve you. You might have left this place with your companions; it was your choice to remain with me. You knew that by returning with them you were liable to punishment for the death of Brandt; though I think, in the eye of heaven, you were fully justified in that transaction; but as it was in some degree taking the law into your own hands, the law might have condemned you. (I found he began to be affected.) My advice to you is, to resign yourself entirely to the will of God, and if you repeat this resolution every morning at your first rising, you will find your heart more at ease. I speak from experience; it has been my constant practice, and I have benefited by it. Should Providence so order, that I may again visit my native country, I shall be thankful for the blessing; if I am doomed to remain where I now am till my death, I trust I shall not repine, but make myself as contented as the nature of my situation will allow."

"Well, well, Mr. Penrose, say no more; if I must

die in this country, I cannot help it ; I will do my best to be satisfied ; you are my good friend ; I will endeavour to think better than I have done, so there's an end on't."

When we got home, we found company arrived there before us, viz. Owa-gamy, Komaloot, and Vinne-quote, brother to Ocuma. Much joy was expressed on all sides at our meeting. Somer put on a more placid air, and we entertained them with the best we had. To my very great surprise, Somer took me aside, and begged I would treat with Owa-gamy to procure him a wife. I promised to comply, at the same time reflected with myself, what a strange inconsistency of character this man exhibited. Considering upon the whole this might turn out favourably for me, I desired Ocuma to mention the thing to Komaloot and the rest, which she did ; and they returned this answer,—“That if Somer desired such a thing, he must come with them and look out a wife himself, as it was not the custom with them for the girls to hunt men, as men hunt deer in the woods.” This brought on a laugh at poor Somer's expense ; and I observed, that to us this would be attended with a very great difficulty, as we did not know the way to their home. Komaloot then very archly asked, whether we desired for them to bring all the girls of their nation for him to choose one from the whole body ? and if they did, they would soon eat up all we had before my new friend would find out one that should please him.

I desired Harry to tell Komaloot that I thought his remark a very just one ; and that we had no other way to settle this business properly, but by Somer's returning with them, to try his own fortune ; and that Harry should go with him, on condition that Vinne-quote, my

new brother-in-law, would stay here in his room, with his sister, till they returned. After a consultation of about two hours, the matter was agreed upon, though not very much to the satisfaction of Patty, who did not like to part with her husband, being near her time.

At length the day came when they were to set off, and as I was for the first time to part with my good friend Harry, I cannot express the reluctance I felt in my mind, and the depression of spirits which it occasioned, for I had the sincerest esteem and affection for him. They set off all of them well armed. My shipmate was dressed in a very odd garb—a pair of Dutch breeches, with a little short jacket, and one of my sombreros on his head. At their departure, I gave Owa-gamy a piece of cloth, and to the rest some trifles, by way of securing their interest in favour of my friends Somer and Harry.

I felt myself now as it were in a new situation, and such as I had not experienced before : Patty was all in tears ; the poor children crying for Harry, and I was myself in a state of great affliction ; for, having been long used to the society of my good friends who had left me, the deprivation was most severely felt. But, however, on this, as on all other occasions, I found patience my best remedy.

I now began to occupy myself more than usual in all our domestic concerns and wants. I was obliged to accompany Vinne-quote every where, as even if he had been ever so well acquainted with our premises, not understanding a word of English, I could give him no instructions.

Thus we remained for about a month ; and now we began to keep a sharp look-out, as we expected them by sea, if Somer succeeded in his matrimonial expedition.

During their absence we got one warree ; and Vinne-quote, being among the traps, espied a tiger devouring a piccary in one of them. He ran to inform me ; and I directly charged my piece with two balls, and quickly despatched him. No tumbler could have shewn better postures than he did ; but Vinne-quote soon put an end to his dancing. He then drew him out and dragged him home. We stripped him at once of his beautiful skin, and spread it out to dry.

Five weeks were now passed, and yet no signs of our gentry. I began to be very uneasy, but kept my fears to myself, that I might not unnecessarily alarm Patty. I often reflected how much happier I lived when I had only Harry and his sister with me : but those days were now past ; what the future might bring forth was known only to Him in whose hands are the issues of life and death.

When first I landed on this desolate shore, what would I have given for the consolation of a companion ! Since that time, I have been fearful of having too many. Whether, in future, I was to have too little or too much company, was a question quite beyond my ability to resolve. Thus are we poor mortals tossed about on the ocean of human life, continually shifting from one scene to another, never at rest, and never knowing exactly, or being contented with, that station which is best suited to our nature and happiness ; but ever changing present security for uncertain prospects, and permanent and solid comforts for projects of doubtful tenure and fanciful expectation ; like children, who grow weary of their playthings, and are not satisfied till they take them to pieces, and by gratifying their curiosity, render them useless for ever.

These reflections were in a great measure produced

by the fickle and variable disposition of Somer, who used to wonder at my fondness for Ocuma, and think it impossible that I could receive any pleasure from her society ; and yet was now in search of an object of the same colour and nation, to be the companion and solace of his retirement. So have I rejected dainties at my mother's table ; but want and the imperious calls of hunger taught me a better lesson. The neglected crust has been eagerly seized, and I have thanked God for the coarsest supply.

I had contrived an angling rod and line, with which, at times, I used to amuse myself at the head of the lagoon. As I was one day at this sport, I heard the sound of a conch shell at a distance. I immediately quitted it,—returned home, and acquainted my household. I then got my glass and colours, and mounted the hill of observation. I soon perceived three canoes coming round the point of the key ; I then went down to dress myself, to receive my guests with the more honour. I put on a suit of a Dutch seaman's clothes, and told Ocuma to wear my tiger jacket —gave a piece of red cloth to Vinne-quote, and a blue piece to Patty. Thus equipped, we got into the yawl, and went down the lagoon to meet them, leaving Jessy with the children.

They soon came into the lagoon, and met us, blowing their shells. As they drew near, I heard messmate Somer begin a Dutch song, spreading abroad his hands, and shewing every token of great joy. Well, thought I, you are pleased at length, I hope ? Soon after Harry began his song. Upon this, Patty burst into a fit of crying and laughing in the same breath. They now all landed and came in. The first who jumped ashore was Harry. He ran with open arms to his wife, then began

to hug me and all the rest. Somer then came forward and shook me most heartily by the hand. "You have succeeded, I hope?" said I. "O! yaw, yaw," he replied; "ober I vill shew you mine bretty young wife Wanee."

Our company consisted of Komaloot, Futee, and four more Indians, who had all been here before, and four ladies, viz. the wives of Komaloot and Owa-gamy, the bride, and another young woman.

As soon as we got to our dwelling, Somer brought me his lady by the hand, and presenting her, said, "Dere is Madam Somer." She was a good jolly figure, aged about eighteen, as I guessed. I told him, I hoped he was now satisfied, and would be more contented for the future. I then welcomed them all, and desired Komaloot to send away a gang to strike fish, as we were not provided for a wedding dinner. Harry, upon this, cried out, they were married already. "That may be," said I, "but I am resolved to have it celebrated here again." Somer approved my resolution, and we began to give a loose to joy and festivity.

I went and made up a good bowl of grog. We then took to our pipes, and the ladies retired to chat by themselves. My shipmate was now become a new man—no silent long puffs of tobacco; his tongue ran the whole time, and he gave us a full account of the reception he met with among the Indians, and of their manners and customs.

Thus we spent our time, till our sportsmen returned with plenty of fish and fowl. As evening came on I ordered Harry to provide a good parcel of torches, and we made free use of our grog, but not a single person was intoxicated. This I took especial care to prevent. About six in the evening the ladies made their appear-

ance again. I saluted the bride and the rest of the company. This was a signal for them to do the same, which produced some merriment. After supper we began to dance, sing, and play, which continued till the sun rose upon us. At last we all grew so weary, that we were glad to turn in to rest, but not one the worse for the liquor he had drank. Thus ended messmate Somer's wedding entertainment; and I must own I was very merry on the occasion; and what made me more so, was the degree of content which Somer seemed to enjoy. His melancholy proceeded from his being like a bird without his mate. This seems to be the unvaried law of nature throughout the universe.

The company staid with us only four days, then took Vinne-quote with them. Madam Somer and my lady soon became sociable together. Harry told me I had forgotten one thing, which was, to give my wife and Madam Somer new names in English. "Well then," said I, "what is the young girl's name?" Somer told me it was a long one, and he could not speak it well. Ocuma told me her name was Matta-nany, or a sweet taste. I then desired her husband to choose what name he thought best for her, and he called her after a sister of his own, Eva, or Eve. I replied, I would call my wife likewise after my sister Betty. Thus was this matter settled.

I told Somer it was time we should think of turtling, it being now the season; and we followed it up with tolerable success for some time. On the 7th of January, Patty presented Harry with a son. He came to me full of joy with the news; but it was soon damped by the absence of little Morgan, who had been missing some time, and could not be found. At last we had the melancholy news brought that he was drowned

in the lagoon. He had been attempting to catch fish with a stick, and when found must have been dead more than an hour. Poor little fellow! I was greatly afflicted at his death; but accustomed as I had been to grief and disappointment, I kissed the rod with humility and resignation, and submitted myself with Christian patience to the infliction which it had pleased Providence to visit me with. After the burial was over, Harry came very innocently to know what name I would give his son. This abrupt question at this moment hurried my spirits. I answered somewhat hastily, "Call him Job." "What is Job?" said he. I told him, patience. "Well, that is a good name," said he; and so the point was settled.

Nothing happened worth notice for a considerable time. We continued to live together in the most friendly manner. We were nine in family. Jessy was become a very fine young woman, and so faithful and obedient in all things, that she would have exposed her life at any time to serve either me or my wife. I now enjoyed full peace of mind, nor had I a wandering thought in my heart. In this state I concluded my ninth year, according to my reckoning.

CHAPTER XVI.

TENTH YEAR OF MY RESIDENCE.

As I was one day leaning against the rock, near the entrance of our dwelling, I could not help contemplating the scene before me, with a degree of complacency that soothed and exhilarated my spirits. (I beheld it with a painter's eye, and would willingly have transferred to canvass the picture before me, but the materials were wanting. The reader will therefore accept of my description, and such a rude sketch as my poor ability can furnish him with.) First, was to be seen the mouth of a large cavern, somewhat resembling the lofty door-way to an old Gothic cathedral, except that the arch was much wider. On the right was my wife Betty, with Patty sitting behind her, braiding her long black hair. A little without the entrance was young Owen taking aim at his uncle Harry, who stood on the other side of the entrance, with his back against the rock, as a kind of butt for him, and catching the arrows as they came in his hand. Somer sitting against the side of the rock within, with his red pipe in his mouth, tailoring, with an old red Dutch cap faced with fur on his head. Eva was receiving a bowl of stewed fish from young Jessy before the entrance. About the centre, within, was my writing-table covered with a piece of sailcloth, at which I considered myself placed, with my pen in my hand, and surveying the scene around me. The two dogs and cat before the door-way basking; the parrot's cage on

one side of the cave, with the bird on the top of it,—the cage an oblong square. From a crevice in the rock projected a long stick, on which Moggy the macaw was to be seen. Over the cavern an immense rock overhung with trees, except towards the top, where stood our flag-staff; the flag was about seven feet long, and five deep, consisting of only two stripes, the upper blue, the under white.

N. B. We wore but little clothing when within doors; the women seldom more than a striped cloth about the middle, and indeed this was almost the only article of dress that distinguished my whole family.

Finding Somer in a communicative mood, I begged him to give me a more particular detail of his journey to the land of matrimony. He said, that as for food they now and then caught land-crabs, and roasted them; they likewise killed two monkeys, which afforded a delicious repast to the Indians. They went over one very long and high hill, with but little wood on it, then descended to a large pond or lake, by the side of which they walked about five miles, as he judged; and here they saw a number of large and very frightful animals, both in the lake and on its banks, some of them with very long tails. These I supposed to have been alligators. He said that not being used to travel so hard, it made his feet blister, so that his guides were obliged to walk his pace, and were always willing to halt, when he expressed a desire so to do. On the 5th day, in the evening, they came to a place where some plantain-trees grew, and there seating themselves, made a hearty meal; so much so, that they finished all they had in store; but instead of making up a fire as usual, they got up to proceed on their journey. This not a little dismayed

him ; and he asked Harry if they intended to travel all night. " No, no," said he, " we are now come home ;" and in a short time they heard the crowing of cocks, and presently after came to a large wigwam. Here the Indians seated themselves, and began to make an odd noise with their hands held hollow before their mouths. This brought forth two Indians, who directly knew them, and they all entered the wigwam. Here they slept till the day appeared, then a number of voices were to be heard, with conches blowing, &c. Soon after many Indians came from all quarters and saluted them, with several women and children, who gazed at him with great curiosity. Finding himself in the midst of them, he offered to shake hands with some of them, but none of the younger sort would touch him by any means. Then Owa-gamy came and took Harry by the hand, and led him about from house to house as a great curiosity, or lost sheep found again. In a day or two they began to grow more free, and would gather round Harry and him to hear them speak English, with which they were highly delighted, and frequently endeavoured to repeat the words after them. He said it was more than a fortnight before they took the least notice of the affair he came upon. Harry told him then, that he would urge Komaloot to hasten the business. He spoke to him accordingly. His answer was, " he did not see that the girls avoided him, and all would be well in good time." Soon after this Harry told him there was a girl in the next wigwam with whom he had conversed, and that she expressed a sort of desire to live with Ocuma, so that if he could get her brother's consent, he was sure she would have him, as he had given her great encouragement, by acquaint-

ing her with the great love Penoly shewed to his wives. He desired Harry to speak to her brother. This he did, and soon after Owa-gamy and the rest assembled on the occasion. Harry told him the matter had been represented to the brother in the most advantageous light, and he gave his full consent. Having seen and admired this girl beyond any other, he desired a meeting of all the parties. In full assembly he took the girl by the hand, and asked her, by means of Harry, if she was willing to be his wife. She answered in the affirmative, and her brother at once presented her to him. The wedding was accordingly celebrated with much joy and festivity, a few days before they set off on their return to my habitation. Thus ended his account of this expedition.

Soon after this, as my wife was sitting near the entrance of our dwelling, she called to me, and desired me to observe what a large guano there was on the green, among the lime-trees; upon this I called to Harry, and pointed out the bird to him as a fine mark; he took his bow and arrows in his hands and shot, but missed, as just at that moment it passed behind a bush; he then snatched up a maschut and gave chace to it. He soon after called to me, and I came up just as he had killed it. The guano had hid itself in an odd kind of nook, covered with bushes. While I was surveying the place, I perceived, through the thicket with which it was surrounded, a heap of stones piled up like a pyramid, about the height of four feet. "Some Indian has been buried here," said I to Harry. "No, no," he replied, "we don't do that way." My curiosity being a good deal excited, I told him to call Somer; I shewed it to him, and begged his opinion. He said he really could not tell what to make of it;

but moving some of the bushes to take a nearer inspection, he drew out a fragment of a glass bottle, and said, by this he believed it was the grave of some white man. "Well then," I replied, "we will search a little further into the affair." He seemed to be quite terrified at the idea of disturbing the bones of any dead person, and desired me to desist. I found by this and other instances, that he was extremely superstitious. "Never mind," said I, "I will take all the mischief to myself; come, Harry, let us begin to work; and remember, Somer, if we find a treasure here, you will have no share of it, unless you lend a hand." Like a true Dutchman, the expectation of profit for a moment dissipated his fears, and he worked as hard as the best of us. After digging for a considerable time, we came to a thick plank. "Now," said I, "let us lift it up." On removing it, we found beneath it part of a skeleton, with the head almost entire, but much decayed. Somer said he would now have no more to do in the business. Finding the skeleton lay between three other boards, I desired Harry to move the bones to another place. While he was at work I took up the skull in my hand, and found a deep indent in it on the right side, as if made with an axe, or some sharp heavy weapon. I shewed it to Somer, saying, there had been foul play here some time or other. When all was cleared off, and the under board removed, I perceived the neck of a large bottle just above the ground; it seemed to be stopped close with some black substance like pitch: I bid Harry dig it up with his maschut, but to be careful not to break it; by this time they had all got round us to satisfy their curiosity.

The bottle I carried home with me, and seating

myself, took out my knife, to examine the contents. "Well, Somer," said I, "will you go shares with me?" "I see, Mr. Penrose," replied he, "that you are a man of a strong heart." I then began to work about the neck of the bottle, but found it would be a very tedious piece of business, and concluded it would be much better to break it at once, as I knew from its lightness it could not contain liquor. I took up a stone for the purpose, and prepared to knock off the neck; Somer was again seized with superstitious fear, and left the place, with evident marks of terror on his countenance; the rest caught the infection, and retired to a good distance, lest some hobgoblin should make his escape from the bottle, and devour them without mercy. This made me smile, but did not alter my purpose; I soon knocked off the neck, and found the contents to be a roll of paper; I then asked Somer if he would draw near and examine it, but he refused to move an inch. I determined, therefore, to overhaul it myself, and found three rolls of paper, one within the other; the first was what the seamen term a round robin, which is an instrument so well known, both as to its effect and intention, as to require no farther explanation from me.

The second paper was an oath of most horrid import, such as usually attends the former, full of dreadful imprecations against any one who should betray the secret of their combination.

The third paper contained some very odd characters mixed with words, yet not so artfully contrived but that with some labour and perseverance the secret might be unravelled; this was intended as a direction to their booty, and to be understood only by one of

their own infernal crew. But heaven never intended they should reap any advantage from their wickedness.

After I had thoroughly examined these papers, and formed my own conjectures concerning them, I called to my friend Somer, and told him he need be under no apprehensions about them; they were machinations of the devil without doubt, but as we served a being of superior power and goodness, they could do us no possible harm, and perhaps in our hands might be the instruments of some benefit to mankind. This brought him to me at once. I put the papers into his hands, but he could make nothing of them. Perhaps I might have been equally ignorant, had I not learned in the island of New Providence, many of the atrocious practices of that set of miscreants called pirates. I therefore began to open his eyes on the subject. I told him nothing was more certain than that the papers I held in my hand had belonged to people of this description; that they had been contrived to answer their own diabolical purposes. It had been an old custom among these wretches, when chance threw any large booty in their way, not to trust it in their vessel, but to hide it on islands, quays, and secret places along the coast, using a most diabolical ceremony at the interment of their ill-gotten riches. Bad men are generally credulous and superstitious to a degree, and stick at no cruelty in the performance of those infernal rites they fancy necessary to their success and preservation. It was a custom with them, after having signed a round robin, and administered the oath of secrecy, to bury their treasure; they would then sacrifice some poor unfortunate Spaniard, negro, or mulatto, and bury him, in order that his spirit might be a kind of guardian, to preserve

their treasure inviolate and untouched till they should return. Papers similar to the above were usually buried near the corpse in bottles to preserve them ; and they generally contained, in a kind of mystical writing, the secret of their treasure, and where it was deposited.

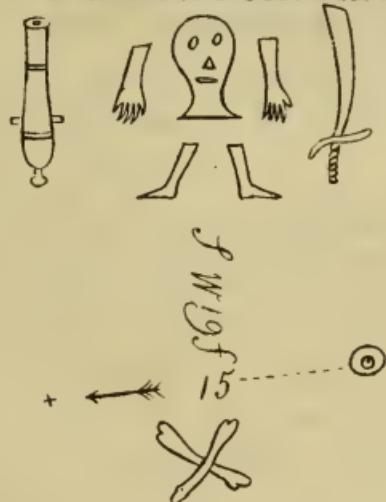
When I had given this affair full consideration, I laid the papers aside in a safe place. I took no further notice to Somer, as he seemed quite indifferent to the business. Harry and I went back to the spot, and threw all the stones together again ; and deposited the bones in a hole close by. I had a full conviction in my mind that a treasure was buried near the spot, and made such marks as would assist any future examination I might think proper to make.

I now transcribed the round robin as exactly as possible from the original manuscript. I presume the names to which crosses are added, belonged to such of the party as could not write.

I likewise give a faithful representation of the third paper, which deserves some notice, as, however extraordinary the figures may appear, they certainly contain the key to their mystery, and a full direction to their treasure, wherever it is to be found.

Though I was persuaded this paper contained the very heart of their mystery, I kept my opinion of it to myself, till some future opportunity should induce me to make the necessary search. For the present, a ton of gold and silver was not equal in value to me with one hundred weight of iron ; and however great the treasure might be, the discovery of it could add nothing to my happiness. Indeed the very idea of having such a deposit near me gave me much uneasiness. It press-

NIMROD'S PORTION.



ed upon my mind continually, and night after night I dreamt of nothing but pirates. I fancied the spirit of the murdered victim was petitioning to be set free;—that the pirates were standing over and threatening us with the most horrid imprecations for discovering their riches. I was often so agitated with these dreadful images, that I started in my sleep, and often waked suddenly, making a great noise, to the great terror of those about me. I often regretted that Harry had pursued the guano. If I had remained in ignorance of this circumstance, I might have been happier.

Time has the privilege of soothing our sorrows and lessening our fears. My nocturnal disturbances were less frequent. The tranquillity which reigned around me restored my agitated spirits, and I began to entertain a curiosity to examine the spot, unattended with any unpleasant ideas of danger in indulging it. Had Somer been equally anxious, I should at once have commenced my operations; but his phlegm produced a degree of indifference in my mind, and for the time I relinquished my purpose.

Some time after this, I proposed to Somer that we should take a voyage along the coast eastward, in order to make some further discovery that way. Somer himself had hinted a wish for such an excursion, as he had a great desire to see the large stone Harry had told him of at Tower's Field. Harry was to be left with the women; and when we had laid in a sufficient store of necessaries, we put down the lagoon in the yawl, and stood along the shore till we got to the old cave, where we landed and got some yams. We then stood out about an hour, when we tacked and stood away for the next bay. After some time we got the length of the creek, where, just as we were going to

land, Swift jumped on shore after a guano, which he soon killed. We then put in and took our way through the bushes, but missed the true track, and could not find out the stone for our lives.

As we remained thus in suspense, our dog at a distance began to howl, and we were sure he had sight of something. We at once followed him, cutting our way with our maschuts, until we opened into a large pond ; here we heard noises resembling the whining of young whelps. The place was quite overgrown with large reeds ; and Somer cried out, "there were some of such devil creatures as he had seen when travelling with the Indians." I called off the dog directly, who trembled very much, and seemed greatly terrified. We now discovered near twenty alligators ; many of them lay sunk beneath the surface of the water, with only the nose out. We quitted the place with horror ; and I could not help reflecting how fortunate I had been to land and settle upon a part of the coast where no such monsters were to be met with, and perfectly ignorant that they were even in the neighbourhood. As I knew these animals seldom quit the ponds to ramble in the uplands, I gave myself but little concern about them.

We now set off on our return, and I struck as near as I could for the rock, which by good luck we soon found. We took a complete survey of it. Somer at first thought it was an old tower ; but when I observed to him, there was not the least sign of any cement, he gave up that opinion. He said, as we came away, he had no doubt but that place had likewise been frequented by the pirates. I confirmed this opinion, and that they were acquainted with the whole coast ; it

being a general practice with them to lurk within lagoons, creeks, and the like, keeping a man posted either on a tree, hill, or mast-head, from whence he could discover a sail at a great distance.

We now went to the palmetto grove and caught three more guanos. We then stood away for Whale Point, as I termed it, but saw no more than the skull and some ribs sunk in the sand. When we got round we landed, and kindling a fire, roasted one of the guanos, and, with the addition of a yam, made a hearty meal.

I now proposed that we should range the long bay which lay before us, about five miles in length, thinking that we might find something drifted there. In a short time we came up with the brig's boom. A little farther on we found three barrels of tar sunk in the sand, which was probably done by our young men. We thus trudged on for above four miles, as we judged, being more ground than I had gone over at one time for several years before. Finding nothing more worth picking up, we determined to return to our boat.

I then proposed to explore round the next point. We were obliged to give it a large berth, as there was a shoal and surf ran out from it. When we got round, we found the land stretch away to the left for about two leagues, then fetch a compass round, more eastward again, as far as the eye could reach. As we were exploring these new scenes, I observed a large smoke ascend about three leagues right a-head of us. I observed to Somer, that there were certainly people on that spot. Before I had done speaking, I descried a sail in the offing, standing to the southward, right before the wind; and so nigh in, that with my glass I saw she was a very large ship.

"What say you now?" said I. "Shall we stand out and shew ourselves?"

"No, no!" he said, "let us take down the mast and lie snug."

This we did, and got her in behind a parcel of low bushes. Here we remained for some time, and saw another fire yet nearer.

"Now," said I, "Somer, I am sure they are Indians or Spaniards; for if they were people in distress, one fire would be sufficient as a signal."

The ship kept her course; and after she had passed by about an hour, we got into our boat, raised our mast, and put away round the point with a flowing sheet. When we got abreast of Tower's Field, we hauled in-shore, and landing there, determined to sleep under our sail that night. The first thing we did the next morning was to get a fire made; and having refreshed ourselves with a good meal, we went in search of some limes, and then, standing along-shore homeward, put into the old plantation, gathered a parcel of yams, potatoes, &c. and arrived at our castle about noon. But how were we amazed on our landing, to find our kitchen burnt to the ground!

They all came running down, crying and clapping their hands for joy at our return. The accident which had happened had so affected me, that I knew not what to say to them, but seeing all my family alive revived my spirits; and I took my wife with one hand and little Owen with the other, and walked up in silence to our habitation—seated myself before the entrance, and then inquired into the particulars of this catastrophe. Harry informed me that Owen went into the kitchen, and was innocently playing with the fire,

without knowing its power, till the whole was soon in flames ;—that, with the women's help, he had saved all the valuable things, at the great hazard of their lives. "Well," said I, "I am heartily glad things are no worse." The loss of our kitchen was, however, a matter of great concern to us all, as we had been so long accustomed to the use of it. It was likewise our hall of audience when we received any visitors.

The next thing was to rebuild our kitchen. One favourable circumstance was, that, where the fire would let them, they had preserved a quantity of the thatch by dragging it to a distance ; by which means the uprights remained unhurt, being of a very hard wood. Somer and Harry were now employed in getting palmetto-leaves to complete our thatch. This being done, we all went cheerfully to work. In about a fortnight our kitchen was finished ; and if it did not quite equal the magnificence of our former building, it answered our purpose equally well.

As the rainy season was now coming on, I proposed to Somer that we should lay in a good store of roots, and other things of that kind, which should be deposited in the back part of our dwelling, safe from any accident of fire. In regard to these long rains, they come on regularly twice a year, but those about October are of the longest duration. They hold on with but few intervals for three, four, or five weeks, more or less. And if, at any time, it should chance to hold up in the evening, the air was filled with myriads of fire-flies, twinkling like so many stars ; and of a serene night, when all was hushed, it might be almost said that you heard the grass grow, for in the space of thirty hours it would spring up nearly three inches. The

most disagreeable thing at this season was a kind of tree-toad, whose noise was the most doleful and melancholy that can be conceived.

We remained chiefly within doors during these rains, and employed ourselves in making pipes, pans, pots, &c. The women spun threads after their manner, and sewed with sail-needles. By way of relaxation we shot at marks with bows and arrows, or played at quoits.

My messmate Somer fell sick of the rheumatism, and became so lame in both arms that he could not feed himself; so that his poor wife was under the necessity of doing that good office for him. It soon after fell into his legs. This being the case, I began to exercise my ingenuity, and made a pair of crutches for him. Assisted by these, he contrived now and then to hobble down to the boat, in which he would sit and fish, and smoke his pipe at the same time; for, to do him justice, he did not like to be idle if he could possibly stir.

He continued in this crippled condition above three months, and then began to mend every day, till he threw his crutches aside entirely. He now, like a true Dutchman, began to think of employing himself in some useful undertaking. He fixed his mind upon making a tub. I thought this beyond his skill, but he really accomplished it, much beyond my expectation. It would hold water well, and became of great use to us.

Nothing worth notice happened for some time after this, but the sight of one sail which passed by to the eastward. I had now completed my tenth year.

CHAPTER XVII.

ELEVENTH YEAR OF MY RESIDENCE.

IT chanced one day as I was at my table writing my Journal, and Somer with his pipe standing behind overlooking me, that he asked me somewhat suddenly, "where I had put that devil paper I had found in the grave?" I expected this subject would be renewed one day or other, and was resolved to let it rest till it came spontaneously from him. I therefore at once closed my book, and turning round, said, "Here is the paper, safe enough, but we will do nothing rashly. I will first light my pipe, then you and I will take a walk and talk over this business deliberately." No sooner said than done. We set off and seated ourselves among the orange-trees, and I began thus:

"I am well assured, my friend Somer, from this paper, that there is a large sum of money hidden in or near the place where we found it; and I think I have made myself sufficiently master of the contents of this paper to know the whole secret. Observe," said I, shewing him the paper, "here are two words; these I consider as a kind of watch-words, known only to the parties concerned. In the next place, here is a man's head; above and below are his arms and feet. This, I think, means to indicate that the person whom they killed is

buried there, that his spirit may guard the treasure deposited near him. The gun and the sword were perhaps the device they carried in their colours, likewise these cross bones ; but now take notice, here is the principal key to the discovery. You see S. W. 19. f. ; that is, 19 feet south-west, and thence 15 feet to the very spot, or else the same distance as this dart directs ; and within such a circle lies the cash or treasure, if any there be, as I believe. You have now my full opinion of the matter."

" Well," said Somer, " suppose we make a trial to recover this treasure?"—" With all my heart," I replied, " if you think you have courage to undertake it."—" Oh ! never fear, der devil vill no hurt me, mit you, master Penoly." I told him I thought it would be better to postpone it a little, till he had recovered more strength. " Youst as you vill for dat," said he. So the thing was dropt for the present.

Soon after this we had a visit from the natives. They brought with them an Indian quite white, and seemingly purblind. I found our people were well acquainted with him ; but as such a sight was quite new to Somer and me, I desired Harry to give some account of it. He said all he knew of it was, that sometimes, but very seldom, such objects were born among them, but as to the cause he could say nothing, but that they were called moon-lights, and supposed to be conceived when the moon was at the full. They were not much respected, and no one could marry with them. They lived and died just as they were, being of no service except on moonshine nights, and then they were as brisk as other Indians, having very strong sight at that time, and would go a-fishing with

their darts, when other people could not see at all. I observed his eyes appeared to be inverted as to ours, like an inverted crescent, and he kept them much closed in the day-time.

This Indian's name was Erre-awa, or white-shiner. The Indians, who came to see us, and had brought him at his request, were Muzo-agay, Dama-sunto, and Vatte-queba. They remained with us about five days, and in that time made a perfect cure of Somer, by means of roots boiled in water, with which he was bathed; and I desired my wife to learn the true use of those roots before they left us.

Soon after they were gone, finding Somer strong on his feet, we made a voyage of discovery to the westward. We took our departure from the point of Long Key, and stood down along the coast about three leagues, when we came to a bluff head land. Near to this, in a small sandy bay, we went on shore. Here we found were multitudes of mullets, and porpoises in pursuit of them. They were so thick that we knocked several on the head with our oars. These mullets have often in their company a fish of a much larger size, called a calipever, differing little in form from the true mullet.

After a short stay we put off again, and stood down along-shore, with the wind easterly, until we saw a long sandy bay, at the farther end of which ran off a rock, with a small hummock directly off that. This we rounded, and then ran into a little cave, where the water was about three feet deep, and here we landed. Somer shot a pohie, or large kind of white crane. These birds are so exceeding white and tall, that I have many times mistaken them for a sail,

especially when they have been standing out far from the shore, on a flat, with the sun shining strong upon them. At such a time they have appeared very large, when nothing but the line of the horizon could be seen behind them; and thus situated, I verily believe, I have seen them at the distance of three leagues, and have not been undeceived, till by flight, or some sudden remove, I have been convinced what they really were.

In this place we spent that evening, but on the morrow the wind was fresh south, so that we determined to go no further, and put back right before it, till we got the length of our Long Key. When we had got round the reef, the wind fell, and it soon became a dead calm. We then turned to and rowed, getting into our lagoon in the evening, not a little fatigued, without much profit or discovery by this cruize.

After we had been home about three days, it came into our heads to examine the pirates' repository. We got our shovels, and marched to the spot. Our Indians could form no idea of our intentions. In the first place we cleared away all the low brush; then I cut a stick about as near a foot in length as I could, and began to measure the ground agreeably to the directions of the paper. Having done this, I told Harry to dig. He worked for some time, with such poor wooden tools as we had, but to no purpose, every now and then meeting with hard roots, which we cut through with our maschuts. However we worked down with some difficulty about three feet, and then desisted for that time. Somer began to laugh at me for my credulity, and said, "All de monies is dere I vil put in my eye, unt den ich sal see too."—"Well," said I, "have a little patience; we will now begin to

dig just so far on the other side, and if that fails, we will have another trial in a line from the feet of the skeleton." I now went to work myself. Harry took likewise a spell, and Somer joined him. When we had got down about eighteen inches, Harry discovered some hard surface. We soon cleared away the dirt, and found a smooth substance like lead. I now began to turn the laugh upon Somer, telling him the prize was found. We then set to work in good earnest. I soon discovered a circle on the plate or cover. We soon got it up, and found it to be a very large bowl, with a cover, which on scraping with my knife I found to be good silver. Harry soon found two more of still larger dimensions, lying on their side. These we dug out, and found them to contain seventeen dishes of various sizes, all silver; four large and twenty-six small oblong plates, six basins which would hold three quarts each, and about fifty smaller things for table use; beneath these we found cups and cans, and then came to a vast quantity of cob dollars. While we were viewing this treasure, Harry observed something of another shape, but we could not move it, and it was with some difficulty we cleared away the earth, and found seven large candlesticks, silver gilt, about four feet long, and very massive. They were doubled to make more easy stowage. We then discovered ten more of smaller size; and after we had taken out about half the dollars, we came to a very large vessel, with four rings to it. This was nearly full of gold coin. The vessel stood upon the ground, therefore we supposed we were come to the bottom of the treasure, and desisted, all of us extremely fatigued with our morning's work. "Now, messmate," said I, "what think you of the riches we have discovered? You

are by much a wealthier man than when you rose this morning ; but whether upon the whole you are a happier one, remains to be proved. I wish, however, the money was all safely lodged in the bank, for all that."

Some of the plate had rich raised work on it, with coats of arms, shewing lions' heads, chevrons, shells, and stars ; and on the feet of some of the candlesticks was the name Isabel Rubialis, 1605. Possessed of this great booty, we were sadly at a loss where to deposit it, or what use to make of it. It is true I could have trusted Owa-gamy and Komaloot with the secret ; but it was almost impossible for them to assist us in the disposal of it, without being discovered by the Spaniards, who would soon have claimed the whole, knowing it to have been the property of their nation. Sometimes we thought of melting the vessels down, but came to no determination. At length it became quite a dead letter with us, being of no real use ; therefore it lay by neglected, just covered over with earth, and no more regarded than mere dross. Indeed we kept a few pieces of the gold coin, as ornaments for the women and children ; and I ordered Harry to plant some lime and guava-seeds before the place, which in a few months entirely covered it. At the same time we gave our Indians strict charge never to drop the least hint of what they had seen before our visitors, lest we might be all involved in difficulties, which it was much easier by silence to prevent, than to counteract the effect of, if once known.

We had now another visit from the Indians, Owa-gamy and three more. Owa-gamy informed us that Komaloot was dead. This gave us the most unfeigned sorrow. I told them, though we had lost so good a

friend, I hoped it would by no means lessen their friendship for us, and that they would visit and esteem us as usual. Owa-gamy gave us every assurance of the continuance of his friendship and regard. He then took occasion to inquire where we got the gold, which he saw on the women and children. He was told it was found on the sands by the sea-shore. His answer was, that he supposed it to be some of the money my countrymen had hidden, when they came along the coast to plunder the Spaniards, in his old father's time. I asked him what he meant by this? He said, when he was a little child, there died among them a very old white man, who had been one of those people. He remembered his name was Yaspe. Moreover that his father, when talking with him, had heard him tell that he had been at the plundering of churches, and getting great riches; that on a time he, with a number of others, had buried a very rich treasure on the coast, to the northward of their dwelling, where they belayed a young mulatto fellow to keep watch over it. That his father, and some other Indians, among whom was old Coduuno, who died in the canoe with me, proposed to go with him in search of it; but that old Yaspe told them, in case he was to find out the very spot, he nor they would be any thing the better for it, as it would, on their digging, continually keep sinking lower in the earth. On their inquiring how this could be, he said, the spirit who kept guard over it would sink it, knowing that we had no title to any part of it; because, on a quarrel with him, his companions had landed or marooned him with a curse, so that he was rendered incapable of being a partaker of this booty. So weak and superstitious were these wretches!

From the particulars already related, I had no doubt

but that this man was one of the gang of pirates who had buried the treasure we had found; and I was the more curious to learn his name, but could get nothing from them but Yaspe. On examining the round robin, I concluded it must be Jasper Cary. Our friends staid with us but three days, and then departed for their own home. We desired they would bear our sorrow away with them to our friends at home, on the death of our good friend Komaloot.

About this time Somer's wife brought him a daughter, which he called Hannah; and three days after my wife presented me with a son, to whom I gave the name of Rees. We were now eleven in family, a little society, secluded from the world and its concerns, yet perfectly happy, if we could but be content, as we wanted for nothing but what we could do well without.

I must now mention an instance of diversion, which often occurred, and which created great mirth. The Indians on their last visit brought with them a monkey, as a present to Owen. This little creature, being very young, and just taken from its dam, grew extremely fond of us, and more particularly so with our dog Swift, so that whenever the dog lay down the monkey would get on its back, and place itself between its shoulders. The dog was equally courteous, and became very fond of his playmate. This attachment commenced by the child first encouraging it to play with the dog; and from this time it was ever on his back, go where he would, the dog never refusing to bear his rider with great cordiality. Harry would sometimes call the dog by his name, and then set off as hard as he could run; the dog would soon follow with the little jockey

sitting on his back. By constant practice the monkey became a very skilful and bold rider; and Somer, as a reward for his skill and perseverance, made him a little cap and whip. Harry, to create more diversion, would sometimes get into the woods, then call eagerly for Swift; the dog and his rider would set off full speed. The monkey was become so good a rider or jockey, that he never lost his seat. It was curious to observe the address he shewed. When the dog would push through thickets, he would dodge his head first to one side then the other, with such ease, that I would defy the best huntsman to dash through a brake with more courage or skill.

If ever we attempted to send the dog into the water, the monkey would be off his back in an instant. He would immediately run home with his cap and whip, and away to my wife—get upon her shoulder, and begin to chatter away, as if he was relating to her all that had happened. On these occasions, he would grow shy of the dog for a day or two, and would not mount his back but with extreme caution, till his confidence was restored by better treatment. Another year had now revolved since I first landed on this shore.

CHAPTER XVIII.

TWELFTH YEAR OF MY RESIDENCE.

ONE day as Somer was going through the trees, he told me he had been sadly troubled by a small bird. As these birds are remarkable, I shall give some description of them. They are about the size of our starling, and called by some the hanger; there are several sorts of them, but all with beautiful plumage; they make their nests to hang down from the outer branch of a tree by a string, or strong fibre; the nest is oblong, like to a cabbage-net: many times as I have passed near one of them, the bird has at once darted down from a limb, full in my face, fled back, and then returned again in the most furious manner, as if it would pick out my eyes, so that I have been obliged to beat it off. These birds are fond of a particular kind of insect, which is altogether as singular as themselves; they are found on cedar, cypress, and such kind of trees; they make themselves a kind of house, something in shape resembling a ship's buoy, and of a substance so rough, that it is impossible to break it with the fingers; they fortify this with particles from the same tree in a very curious way. At the upper end of the nest, the insect appears with about half its body out, and is constantly employed in spinning its threads, lowering itself down, and then hauling itself up, hand over hand, as the sailors term it, with great dexterity. I have seen above a thousand of them hanging on one tree, like so many bobbins. It is curious to observe

how cunningly the hanging bird catches them as he flies ; when he has taken one, he puts it under his foot on a limb of the tree, and then easily disengages, and devours it at his leisure.

We often found land-tortoises ; these Harry told me were choice eating, and indeed we used to make excellent soup of them. It is astonishing how long these animals will retain life and motion after the head has been cut off ; I have myself known them to move several days after that operation, if kept in a shady place.

One day this year, being out about half a mile, at the back of our dwelling, I proposed to extend our excursion into the country, to see what we could discover. We put it off to the next day, and then armed ourselves properly for the occasion. For some time our passage was exceedingly hard and difficult ; at length we gained ground, and came to an opening that was somewhat clear, though here and there were large clumps of fine lofty trees, and beyond them a bare country ; we soon discovered three deer, and our dogs at once put after them, but they were soon out of reach. We now came to a place where there was a kind of morass, on the other side of which was a long range of broken banks, where multitudes of wild parrots flew over our heads. This scene was quite new to us, which made us more particular in our observations. At the foot of the bank Somer found a monstrous skull of some beast ; it was so heavy that he could scarcely lift it ; the jaw teeth were many of them yet in the head, quite sound, but could be drawn out easily ; some of them, I am certain, weighed as much as two pounds. Going a little farther on, I pulled out of the bank a rib of a great size, and near it we found more bones, I

presume belonging to the same animal, but of what species I was ignorant: Somer insisted it must be an elephant, as he had seen several; but I never had, and therefore could not determine. We brought away three of the teeth. We found that several bits of wood or stick, that had fallen into the water, were petrified. We now mounted the bank, which commanded a most extensive view all round us; and having so far satisfied our curiosity, we returned. When we got home, a council was held over the teeth, but none could give an account of any such animal. Harry, indeed, said, that he had heard the old folks say they had found such large bones when hunting, but they never could say to what animal they belonged. And thus the matter rested.

Shortly after this, Somer proposed that we should have a day of general amusement for the whole family in the boats, it being exceedingly fine weather. Accordingly, the next morning, every thing being ready, we embarked in our two boats; Somer, his wife and child, myself and my wife and children, in the yawl; Harry, his wife, Jessy, and child, with the dogs, in the great canoe. We had a very pleasant voyage to the old plantation; from thence we put off for the end of Long Key, where we landed the women and children. I remained with them, while Somer, Harry, and Owen rambled along the south shore. In about an hour Harry came back, and said they had found a very large boat, like that which Somer's companions had gone away in to the south; but it was full of sand, and he desired I would come and see it. I accompanied him, and found it to be an English long-boat, with a bilge in her bow, on the starboard-side, painted black and yellow, and appearing, though much weather-beaten, not to be an old boat. As we found, so we left her for the present.

I returned to the women, and they went after the birds. I now began to divert myself with my line ; and, throwing out, caught a couple of large mutton-fish ; these, with a few red-shanks and sea-pies, which they brought back with them, gave us a plentiful meal, which we partook of under an awning which Somer and Harry raised for us with our sails. This being a kind of feast, we indulged ourselves with a little toddy and our pipes. In the evening we returned home, and escorted our ladies to the castle, in high spirits.

Some time after this, Somer and I determined to go and clear out the boat we had discovered. This cost us some trouble ; but we patched her up so as to make her swim home very well. The next thing was to get her up. This we accomplished by the help of rollers ; and all hands being mustered to assist, we placed her so that Somer could easily work upon her ; for he was at once our carpenter, sailmaker, caulker, and cooper. Having accomplished our object, we did not regret the labour it had cost us, which was not a little, as we worked by spells, moving her inch by inch.

As I observed Somer uncommonly diligent in repairing the long-boat, I asked him one day, where was the necessity for all this great labour and pains he was taking, as, when she was refitted, we should have but little or no use for her, as we had two sail-boats and a canoe already ? He said it amused him ; so I held my peace for the time. But when it was finished, I told him that he and Harry had only made a new job for themselves. "How was that ?" he said. "Why, you must now fall to and build a shed over, or launch at once, as the sun will otherwise soon demolish her." In order, therefore, to preserve her from the sun and worm, they built a shed over her, and she remained in perfect security.

The next business we entered upon was melting down our silver plate, thinking by that method we might some time or other get it off. We began by digging a large hole, and Harry was some time employed in cutting billet-wood. When all was ready, we made up a kind of cross-pile, and laid the different things thereon. When the whole was completed, it formed a huge pyramid ; and though the fire was well kept up, yet it was about five or six hours before the whole was melted down. We then left it to extinguish itself. In a day or two we cleared away all the ashes, and found a noble mass of plate, which had run into many odd shapes. These we were obliged to reduce into smaller pieces, and it cost Harry work enough ; but as employment was at all times happiness, he set cheerfully to work ; and what by bending the thinner parts, and applying the axe to what required more strength, he at length reduced the whole. We then buried the pieces in a private place, against the time (if ever) when they might be of use to us.

I now proposed another excursion to Harry and Somer along the shore south-west of the Long Key. Accordingly, they took the large canoe and left us the next morning. When they were gone, I took the gun and went among the traps, not daring to go far in their absence. In one of the traps I found an odd kind of beast of a brown colour. It had been there so long that it was in a state of decay ; so I left it till the boat should return. This day I shot a very beautiful parrot, which was white as snow, except a fine crest of yellowish feathers on the head. When I shewed this bird to my wife, she said it was an auchco, and observed that they never talk much.

My two friends did not return that night, and I began

to grow very uneasy at their absence, fearing they had met with some disaster. The wind still continued blowing off shore, and I could not sleep all the night. My suspense continued till the next afternoon, when, to my great joy, I saw them coming round the east end of the Long Key. They brought home with them a very large kind of shark, such as I had not seen before. This fish had no teeth, and its skin was exceeding rough. They had also in the boat a large lump of ambergris, differing in colour from that which we had found before. I inquired what had kept them out all night? He told me they had ranged the shore for more than five miles, where they found a cask, which they believed to be either beef or pork, and had left it safe on the beach, until I should think proper to go and examine it. Soon after they saw a vessel standing to the southward, upon which they unshipped their mast, and retired among the trees; but that, in about an hour, she tacked and stood out to sea. It now grew so late, that they determined to remain there for that night, though they were plagued to death by the mosquitoes. There was a pretty small creek running up about forty yards, at the head of which was a charming run of fresh water, and there they passed the night.

I could not conceive how that vessel had escaped me, except she was too far to the southward for my eye. I now took Harry to the trap, and shewed him the animal I had found. He examined and gave me this odd account of it. He said animals of this kind live chiefly by catching ants; they creep slowly on towards a nest, lying flat on their bellies, then put forth their tongue to a great length, which never fails to attract multitudes of these insects upon it. When the beast finds, by their strong biting, that he has got a sufficient

freight, he then whips in his tongue, swallows them, and begins the same process again. Harry pulled out the tongue of the dead animal, which was exceedingly long, narrow, and round.

One day as Somer and I were walking on the shore, near some low flat rocks, we saw a very curious scene between two sea-crabs. The singularity of it struck me, and will, I hope, be a sufficient apology for inserting it in my Journal. I had just seated myself on a large stone of very considerable length, when I saw a crab come up the side of it, march slowly towards the middle, and there squat down. In about a minute after, up came another on the opposite side; the moment the first crab saw the second, it erected itself on its legs as tall as possible; the last comer then advanced very slowly for about three feet towards the other, and made a full stop, both attentively looking at each other. The second crab then began to move in an oblique direction, but quite slow, to a very wide angle from the right to the left, so as to form a kind of curve, or simicircular motion, to the crab in the centre. This he repeated for a considerable time, making his regular advances by contracting his curve, always increasing his velocity as he approached; so that by the time he had made about two-thirds of his progressive motion, his velocity became so exceedingly quick, that the eye could scarcely catch the motion. The centre crab kept moving, at the same time, as if on a swivel or pivot, until the male crab came very nigh; she then threw off all further restraint, and submitted herself willingly to his embraces.

This naturally leads me to make some remarks on the other sort, called land-crabs. They are of an amphibious nature, but their chief residence is on land.

There are two sorts or colours of them; the one of a chocolate colour, the other that of mulatto. The dark sort is reckoned the best, and is to be found even some miles in the country. They have their regular time of coming down to the sea, which is in the breeding time, about March. What is very extraordinary, when they are on the march, they never turn either to one hand or the other; but whatever impediment is in their passage, they mount over it, even if it should be as high as one story of a house. At this season, they come down from the country by thousands; the males are then so vicious that they have frequent battles, fight furiously, and give each other such blows with their great claws, that the sound may be heard at least twenty yards; their claws being much larger than those of the sea-crab. When one of them perceives he has the advantage of his adversary, he endeavours to seize him by one of his large claws, and then holds him for such a length of time, that his antagonist, finding no other means of escaping, gives such a sudden jerk with the joint next his body, as to leave the whole member to be devoured by his enemy, and thus makes his escape.

This sort of crab devours indifferently every thing it can come at. They burrow deep in the earth, having generally two holes; the one, perhaps, to make their escape by, or for some other reason. They are so very swift, that if they have a fair field for the chase, it is impossible to overtake them. They differ in bodily shape from the sea-crabs, being of a round and compact form. The lizards take particular care to avoid them; knowing that if they come within reach of their claws, it is inevitable destruction.

I now began to observe that Somer would often fall

into a melancholy, desponding mood. He accused himself as the instrument of Brandt's death, and considered himself as stained with the sin of bloodguiltiness. Wretch as he was, he lamented that he had dispatched him in the midst of his wickedness, with all his sins unrepented of. I did every thing I could to convince him, that what he had done was justifiable in the eyes of God and man. He had seen him commit a most cruel and unprovoked murder, and did not know to what lengths his fury might lead him; from the disposition of Brandt, little contrition, but much mischief, was to be expected; in our little community it became absolutely necessary to exercise the functions of the executive as well as legislative authority: in fact, he had killed him when he was in the very act of destroying a poor, inoffensive, unarmed Indian; and perhaps, by thus taking him off, was an instrument, in the hands of Providence, not only to punish his guilt, but to preserve the lives of others of the family, who might have fallen victims to his violence. He seemed much relieved in his mind by the conversation we had together upon the subject; and in order to divert his thoughts from it, I proposed that we should go the next day to examine the cask they had found. To this he agreed, and we set off accordingly in the yawl. When we came to the spot we scuttled it, in order to see its contents. We found it filled with hams, took it on board, and returned home. On trial, we found they had lost all their saltiness; we hung them in the sun to dry; and dry they did sure enough, for they became as hard as sticks. The Indians would never taste them; Somer and I now and then cut a piece by way of novelty, but it was very insipid.

I shall now give the reader a sample of my courage

when put to the test. My wife and Harry took it into their heads, one evening, to divert themselves a little at my expense. She knew it to be my custom sometimes to cut a slice of those hams in an evening, to eat with a plantain. As I was sitting, as usual, on a stool without, smoking my pipe, my wife asked me why I did not take a bit of the ham for my supper? I immediately got up, and opening my knife for the purpose, went in to cut a slice. These hams were hung a great way back in the cavern. As I advanced towards the place, whistling as I walked along, I was all at once struck with one of the most horrid sights I had ever beheld. I ran back much faster than I had entered, with my hair quite standing on end. My wife observing me so much alarmed, burst into a fit of laughter. This brought me a little to myself; and she then told me the secret, and rallied me not a little, saying, she wondered white men could be frightened at such trifles, who were not afraid of the winds and great waters. Having now recovered my spirits, I went in again with her to view this tremendous object, for such it really was. Harry having got four fireflies, such as I before mentioned, almost as large as chafers, had contrived to fix two of them between his teeth, and the other two over his eyes, and thus lighted up, had placed himself in a dark corner. The light thrown upon his face was of a greenish hue, and made him look altogether so cadaverous, that I think the stoutest heart would have been daunted at the sight.

Somer happened to be out when this trick was played off upon me. When my wife saw him returning, she told Harry to place himself as before. As he came up I joined in the frolic, and asked if we should

get a bit of ham each for our supper ; he agreed to the proposal, and I begged he would cut a piece for both. He said he would freely, and went into the cave for the purpose. In a very short time we heard him holla, but he did not run back, as we expected. This rather alarmed us ; but presently Harry came running out in a very great fright, calling for assistance. We ran in, and found Somer lying in a fit. I ordered a torch, and it was near an hour before he recovered his senses, notwithstanding all our endeavours. I then gave him a little gin ; and, when he was able to converse, asked him what ailed him ?

“ Oh ! donder, donder ! ” he said ; “ ich sall never liven much long.”

“ What has terrified you, shipmate ? ” said I ; “ you stare like one mad.”

“ Mine vriend,” he replied, “ I bin see von spook for Brandt.”

I told him it was all fancy ; that he had fallen into a fit, and I supposed he was subject to them. He said, No ; never before, that he knew of. I would now have given a thousand dollars this trick had not been tried ; however, as the best expedient, I recommended him to lie down immediately, and endeavour to sleep. To this he consented ; and I gave his wife a charge to watch by him, and that not a word should be said to him of what had passed, before the next morning. He slept well, and seemed much recovered. I then discovered to him the whole business, and told him I had been served in the same manner. This made him easier ; but he was not thoroughly convinced till the same was repeated the next evening, and then all passed off very well.

I have been always averse to frolics of this kind, as

very idle and very dangerous. Few young people reflect on the consequences that may possibly follow them. Society may be deprived of a very useful member by a sudden fright. Instances of this kind have happened. The nervous system may be thrown into such disorder, as never perfectly to recover from the shock. The gratification which we derive, from thus sporting with the feelings of our friends or fellow-creatures, is of a malevolent kind ; and it would at all times be much better to lose our joke, than endanger our friend's corporeal or mental happiness.

CHAPTER XIX.

IT was now about the middle of July, when, as Somer and I were on a hill looking out to seaward, I thought I discovered some kind of vessel in the offing. I therefore called for my glass, which Eva brought up to me. I was right in my conjecture ; but we were at a loss what to make of her, as she was under no sort of sail, and was too far out to be at anchor. It was about noon when we first saw her, and there she remained all that day. The next morning I went up again, and found she had not drifted half a mile from her first station. Somer was for going to reconnoitre her ; I thought it too hazardous, and objected. This seemed to make him uneasy ; I therefore told him, if she continued in that way two hours longer, I would consent to go in our yawl, to get a more satisfactory

view of her. With this he was not perfectly satisfied ; he was convinced, he said, she was in distress ; and why should we hesitate a moment, when we were called upon by so sacred a duty as that of preserving life, to give the most effectual and speedy relief ? I replied, that his motive did him honour, and I would immediately comply with his request. I at once ordered Harry to get the yawl ready, that we might set forward on our expedition.

I found that my wife was extremely anxious that I should not go ; I therefore told Somer that Harry should accompany him, giving him a strict charge not to go too near, unless they saw an absolute necessity of so doing. We saw them go off with a light wind ; and, during their absence, my mind was in a continual agitation. Every now and then I took a fresh lookout, and saw, to my satisfaction, that Somer was determined to keep his wind of her. Soon after I saw them lie to ; and in a little time perceived a small thing put from alongside the vessel, and join our yawl. My anxiety increased every moment. I now saw both boats go alongside the vessel : and the reader may judge what my feelings were whilst they continued on board. In a short time they again put off, and stood right in for our bay. My impatience was extreme. To my great satisfaction, I discovered our people in the yawl ; and as they came in, I ran down eagerly to inquire what news.

Somer eagerly called out for water, which was soon given to him. He then told us it was a sloop from St. Jago de Cuba, in great distress ; she had been struck by lightning, which had carried away the mast about six feet above the partners. Two hands were struck dead, and they had not one drop of water left when

they came on board, having finished the last the day before ; and the little brought in the yawl was a great relief to them. I asked, how he came to understand them ? He told me the captain, he believed, was an Irishman, and could speak English very well ; his name was Denis Organ, and he begged them to give him all the assistance in their power. " How many hands are there ? " said I. He said, " Three men and a boy." I then bid them fill our empty kegs with water, and take it off to them, as it was impossible for us to give them any farther assistance till the sloop was brought in and at anchor. Somer said, he had given them directions to go for water to the point of Long Key ; which, I told him, was right.

We now took in some of our provisions, and put off directly. As we got out of the lagoon, we saw their boat rowing for the Key-point, and hurried off to them as fast as we could. When we got alongside, the captain stood crossing himself and blessing us, at the same time making bows to me. I jumped on board directly, when he met and eagerly kissed me, saying, that we were angels sent from the Holy Powers to save their lives. I asked the captain how long they had been in this distress ? He said, they had been out twenty-nine days, and eighteen in distress. They had not one spar left ; they first got up the squaresail-yard to the boom as a mast, or rather jury-mast, and lost that three days after, being carried away in a gale of wind ; and now she was become a mere log ; having nothing more they could make use of ; and, if there had been any thing, they were so exhausted it would have availed them but little. I told him, the first thing to be done was to get her in-shore to an anchor, and then we would endeavour to cut down a tree that should answer his purpose. He then asked

us down below, and offered us some *aguardiente*. I told him we were not used to any strong liquors, therefore begged him to excuse us. "O ho!" said he, "my dear children, you are the first sailors I ever saw who did not like a drop of the silly creature." I replied, I could tell him more on that head another time.

As we were conversing, I saw a book on the locker, which curiosity tempted me to take up; to my great surprise, I found it to be Spenser's *Fairy Queen* in English. This was the first book I had seen for many a long year; of which I informed the captain. "And is it, in troth?" said he; "why then, honey, I could gratify your desire by the fistful; but first let us be getting the sloop to an anchor, by your laves." This, I told him, should be done the moment his boat returned; which was soon after; and we towed her into twelve fathoms water, and there came to. The evening coming on, I took my leave of them, as I did not choose to remain on board all night, lest something might happen at home. I asked the captain to come on shore with us, but he declined it, not choosing to leave the sloop.

I slept but little that night, and, about three in the morning, roused Harry, and bid him call Somer. We then put off down the lagoon, and were obliged to row to the sloop, as it was a dead calm. They were all turned out, waiting our arrival.

"Good morning to you, my dear creatures," said the captain, "and long life to you!" We then jumped on board, and went below. I observed there were on board one Spaniard and two negroes.

The captain took up a bottle, and, holding it up to the light, said, "Well, now, what may your name be called, I pray?"

I told him, Penrose, at his service.

"Penrose!" said he. "Were you ever on board the old Namur, young man?"

I answered in the negative.

"Well, faith and troth then, honey, I was well acquainted with one Davy Penrose on board that ship, in the year 1738."

"You must know," said I, "that is somewhat too old a date for me."

"Faith, and that is true, I believe," replied he: "but, however, it's the same thing, you know; he might be your elder brother."

"Not brother," I said, "but perhaps some relation."

"Oh! then, by my soul, you don't gain much credit by your kinsman, joy; for he would be after milling and pilfering any one's duds he could lay his hands on; so that some of our knowing lads would be after remarking, that he was a fisherman's boy, and each of his fingers a fish-hook. But that is neither here nor there; take a little bob of this, honey,"—holding out the bottle and glass to me.

To humour him, we took a small quantity, and then turned to and got up the anchor; leaving the skipper at the helm, we got three into each boat, and began to tow her farther in. While we were thus employed, the old man asked me if I knew a good berth to bring her to in? "I have not been here so many years without knowing that," I told him. After we had been towing about an hour, he called the boy Perico on board, and ordered him to cook us a good mess of chocolate. The sound of chocolate revived my heart; and we were soon served with about a pint each, and a good Spanish biscuit. We then brought her to an an-

chor opposite our old plantation, where she lay snug enough, in about two fathoms water.

When we had so far brought matters to bear, I invited the captain and his company to our poor habitation. He said, "with all his heart;" so, leaving the boy to look after the vessel, we came away together; his two people and Harry rowed us. We there sat conversing together. I briefly ran over my story; the old man would every now and then cry out, *Salve, Domine!* At length we came to our habitation. I then took Captain Organ by the hand, and bid him welcome. The rest of our family had gathered round to meet us; but no sooner did they fix their eyes on the negro man, whose name was Roderigo, than the children ran away, terrified at the sight of him; the women also began to move off, as I believe none of them had ever before seen an African negro.

I told this kind old Hibernian, that, without any ceremony, he was free to make use of our place as he thought proper; that Somer and I would give him every assistance in our power, and that we had plenty of those things which were absolutely necessary to support nature, but that for dainties, we had long learned to dispense with them; when we were a little refreshed we would take a walk into the wood, and mark a proper tree for a mast, which Somer very generously undertook to make. I took an opportunity to ask him what quantity of powder he had on board. "Arrah, honey," said he, "it is not long since I thought I had too much of it on board, when we were singed by the lightning." I told him we had a fine lump of ambergris by us, and if he approved of it, we would exchange it with him for powder. "Och!" said he, "you shall have what I can spare, joy, for nothing at all, at

all: one good turn deserves another, you know; you relieved us in our distress, and we are bound to return your kindness with gratitude." I then presented the women and children to him, and as the negro seemed fond of the little ones, they soon grew familiar with him.

After we had dined, Somer and Diego the Spaniard took a walk in search of some sticks to cut for a pair of sheers, while the captain and I hunted for a tree fit for a temporary mast. Having completed this business, we returned, and chatted over our pipes; a practice he had not been accustomed to these last five years, having used nothing but segars. He promised to present us with some tobacco, with a little sugar and chocolate. I mentioned twine, needles, nails, &c., or any thing else he could well spare, most of which we afterwards obtained in some degree. The next day the trees were felled; Somer and Diego went to work on them, and in about five days they formed a tolerable mast.

The captain told me, it was very surprising they had never once had sight of any vessel during the whole time of their distress, being frequently becalmed for days together; and that two casks of water were stove during the thunder-storm in the hold, and five long bars of iron fairly melted. When they were first struck, he imagined all the people were killed, as they were all struck down. Pedro, Gomer, and Martin Galvan never revived, and were committed to the deep the next day. I inquired to what place they were bound? He said, to a port called Madalina; and that he was himself half-owner of the sloop, which was about sixty tons burthen, quite old, and much out of repair.

The next day the captain and I, with Harry and the negro, went away to the sloop, taking some yams

and beans for the boy's use. While we were on board, I asked him to give me a sight of some of his books. He called Perico to bring him a square box; when it came, I was very much struck by seeing the following direction on it, done with black paint:—

“To the care of Mr. Aaron Manby, Kingston, Jamaica.”

“This has been prize-goods, I suppose?” said I.

“Faith and troth and it was all that,” replied the captain; “they have lain a long time at St. Jago, in an old store, unheeded, as few or none could read them, so I got them for a trifle, honey.”

I asked if he would part with them, and what he would take for the whole lump?

“Why, as to that, my dear,” said he, “I don't care much to part with them at all, do you see, because I know some of my acquaintance where I am bound will give me a good price for some of them, as we never have any English books come among us, but by the wheel of Fortune, as I may say.”

“Well, then,” said I, “will you take the value of fifty pieces of eight, as you say you gave but a trifle for them?”

“Indeed, Mr. Penrose, I can deny you nothing at all at all; and so, do you see, if you will give me seventy dollars, they are yours, and a cheap bargain too.”

Now, thought I, you are an old fox.

“Well, then, captain,” said I, “I will give you in good solid silver the full value of seventy dollars: is it a bargain, or not?”

“Shew me the money, my dear,” he replied.

“As to money, where should I get cash? but the full weight in silver will answer your purpose as well.”

"Are you upon honour, my jewel?"

"I am," I told him.

"Then you shall have them, honey ; so say no more, but take them with you when you go." And to mend the bargain he gave me a bottle of cordial.

I then called Harry, and, with the negro boy, got the box into the yawl. I was now quite eager to be on shore. Just as we were going to put off, and waiting for the old man who was in the cabin, I was surprised to hear the negro talking English with Harry, and laughing. "What makes you so merry, blacky?" said I.

"Massa, I was tell your man that the old fellow well paid for those books."

"How so?" I replied.

"Because I was with him when he paid for them, and he gave but five pieces of eight."

"Well, well," said I, "never mind that now ; pray, where did you learn to speak English?"

He said he was born in Spanish Town, Jamaica, and was carried off by a privateer from Old Harbour, about thirteen years ago, when quite a boy.

"Are you a free man?"

"Yes," he said, "my wife bought my freedom ; she is a Spanish mulatto of Rio Madalina."

When we came on shore, I told the captain I would convince him of my honour. I then produced a quantity of silver in pieces, bid him examine and try it till he was fully satisfied : he began to cut it, and try the weight of it in his hand, and exclaimed, "By the holy St. Colomb it is good plate, sure enough ; and where did you find it?"

"By chance, digging for turtles' eggs," said I.

"Well, then, by the blessed St. Patrick you are a fortunate man, Mr. Penrose, to find turtles that laid silver eggs."

"Well, captain, how shall we weigh this plate?"

"Leave that to me, honey," said he.

"Not entirely," I replied; "you will allow me to have some little hand in it." Then taking up a piece, I asked him what he valued that at? "About eight dollars," he said. Thus we went on till his avarice was fully satisfied. This done I wrote a receipt, and he put his name to it.

We now paid a visit to the mastmakers, and brought them down to the cave, where I made them a good yabba of toddy from our little store. We sent the canoe out a-striking, and in about two hours they returned with a fine mess of fish, which was directly cooked. As we were eating, the old man asked me if I was a catholic. I answered in the negative.

"Ah! that is your misfortune," said he; "but no matter, honey, if you are not to be saved, that is no fault of mine, you know; only it is a great pity that your people will be after quitting the true and only old mother church."

"Never mind dat," said Somer, "don't you see how the goot Got mack his sun shine 'pon all? You vill neet send us to de Devil, when we make you von goot mast."

The old man seeing himself so much obliged to us, did not persist in sending us to perdition, and the business ended amicably. We took our pipes with some of the captain's excellent tobacco, and the old man went up the hill with Somer and Diego to see the work.

In the mean time, I took the opportunity to examine my purchase, and found the contents as follows : The Fairy Queen, Pope's Essay, Spectator, Seneca's Morals, Chaucer's Tales, Don Quixote, Ovid's Epistles, Josephus, Anson's Voyage, Ramsay's Songs, Fox's Book of Martyrs, a fine large old Bible with large clasps, Spectacle de la Nature, some of Baxter's Works, Virgil, Homer, and Horace, and many pamphlets unbound. These books had been so much neglected, that the worms had passed through them in many places, but had not entirely spoiled them. However, I thought the old captain well paid for them, though I would not have returned them for double the money ; and I was so proud of my purchase, that I stowed away the box with all imaginable care, considering the contents as an inestimable treasure.

The next day we sent off the sheers and a small boom. When the mast was finished, we mustered all hands, and with rollers and handspikes got it down to the lagoon in two days, from whence it was towed alongside. Somer was appointed master-rigger. The next day they raised the sheers ; on the Morrow the boy came in and told me that Somer had got the mast in, and the captain desired I would let him and the boy go out and strike fish for them, while they got up the shrouds and other things. I dispatched them accordingly, and likewise gave them some roots, and what else I could spare.

It was above a week after this before Somer had got her any way in readiness ; her main-sail was then to be cut less to suit her mast, which was not so stout as the former. In about a fortnight they got her in a tolerable condition to proceed. We then made a kind of feast on shore, and were very merry on the oc-

casion ; the old gentleman was quite liberal to us, giving us all he could well spare. They remained with us almost a month, living chiefly on provisions from our plantation, and by fishing and gunning. They left with us about thirty pounds' weight of powder, and about one hundred of bar lead. The captain gave our women some boxes of marmalade. They had a quantity of dry goods on board of several kinds. He gave me about two dozen of Barcelona handkerchiefs, a variety of ribands for the females, and a small pocket compass, a thing which gave me great joy ; he desired Somer to accept of a plane and a pair of compasses ; to Harry he gave an hour-glass, with which he was so much pleased that he would often lay himself down and watch the whole run out before he would stir, frequently striking the glass to make it run faster, as he believed. We likewise got store of twine, thread, hooks, needles, pins, two penknives, and many other articles we stood in need of. The time now drew nigh that they were to leave us. I settled with the old man and paid him the full value of every thing he spared us, and refused every compensation for our labour ; telling him that the relief we had the power of giving was the performance of a duty only, and the pleasure we received in bestowing it a sufficient reward. In fact it was no more than practising the lesson we had been so often taught by the poor Indians.

Matters being thus settled, the old man asked me to take a walk with him ; and he addressed me thus : " Mr. Penrose, how was it possible for you to live so many years among a parcel of savages in a desert country ? No doubt, my dear, you will be glad to embrace the opportunity of going with us ; as to the leaving them, you knew, they will be in a better

situation than when you met with them ; therefore go with me, honey, in my sloop, and you will be a happy man indeed ; we have some holy men with us, who will put you in the right way, my jewel, and bring you into the holy church, which will be better than spending your time in a wilderness in this world, with little chance of better fare in another, you know."

" I told him, that, as to living with savages, I could have no very great objection ; they had treated me kindly, and I had received from them instances of attachment and regard, which would do honour to any state of society. Were there no savages in civilized Europe ? I fear many, and more ferocious. To the candid and simple manners of these innocent creatures I was strongly attached : we were united by the obligations of friendship and reciprocal regard ; they had fostered me with kindness when I was naked and alone ; I had taught them some useful things, they had repaid me by their fidelity, and by their affectionate endeavours to promote my happiness by every means in their power : I would never desert them ; I was perfectly contented with my situation ; it was true we did not enjoy the superfluities of the busy world, but we had none of its wants or its cares ; we had every thing that was needful for the preservation and support of life, with good health, sound sleep, and the uninterrupted enjoyment of the greatest blessings that sweeten human existence—love and friendship. In regard to my spiritual state, I was resolved to continue steadfast in that religious faith in which I had been educated, and that I was well assured my friend Somer had made the same resolution. I had not a wish to leave the place ; but if hereafter an English ship should touch here, and would transport me and my family to

my native land, the temptation might be too great for me to withstand. But, my good friend, before we part I have one favour to beg of you: it is, that you will keep my residence on this coast a secret, particularly from the Spaniards. Our continuing here can be in no respect injurious to them, but their knowledge of my situation would at once disturb our quiet enjoyment, and drive us from a habitation where we pass our time in innocence and peaceful tranquillity."

He grasped my hand, and swore by St. Patrick that he would keep silent on that subject, and that he would so manage it with his crew that they should be equally cautious to prevent its being discovered. In a few hours after this he proposed to depart; we waited on him to the sloop. Having got up the anchor, I stood pilot till they were clear of the Long Key, and then bid them a good voyage, returning safe back to our old mansion. I trust we performed our duty by them in every respect, and I have little doubt but they made a saving voyage of it, as we gave them both our pieces of ambergris, which must have been of great value.

This adventure upon the whole made us extremely happy, in the opportunity it gave us of reading and hearing the Holy Scriptures, which proved a great comfort to us. After they were gone I repented that we had not sold them the long-boat; but Somer said it would have been of no service, as they could neither hoist her in nor out, and to tow her would impede their way too much; besides, it was not impossible but we might want her ourselves.

Some months after this poor Somer grew very ill, with spitting of blood and other bad symptoms, which I supposed might have been brought on by his intense application to reading and study. I therefore begged

him to refrain, at least for a time, and whenever he had an inclination I would read to him ; advising him at the same time, as we had now powder, to go out often with his gun, or attend Harry on his fishing excursions : the exercise and air would in all probability complete his recovery. He complied with my advice, and soon became much better.

CHAPTER XX.

THIRTEENTH YEAR OF MY RESIDENCE.

IT was now the latter end of June : time rolled on as usual ; nothing of any consequence had occurred, except that my school advanced much in knowledge ; my son Owen could read tolerably well, and Harry was very forward : I had in the whole six scholars, all of them very attentive and diligent, and I kept them to regular business every day. One day Somer and I took it into our heads to count over our treasure, for hitherto we had suffered it to remain without notice or regard ; we began with the gold, and found it to amount to five hundred and fifty-seven pistoles ; the silver to seven thousand nine hundred and forty-four dollars,—a fine sum this to be divided between two poor shipwrecked sailors !

“ I trust, Somer,” said I, “ we shall make a better use of this treasure, even if we are ever restored to the world, than we should have done had it been obtained by privateering, and we had continued in the courses we then pursued.”

He agreed with me in this, and said, "Mine vriend, it be best as it is: we were then mad; we are now, I tink, sober and discreet, and every thing that has happened has been for the best; so we sal bless Got and be content."

We now disposed ourselves to be as satisfied with our situation as possible; we diverted ourselves with various amusements, such as shooting at marks with bows and arrows, playing at quoits, setting the young women and children to run races, &c. &c. In a short time after, as Somer and I were talking together on a few lines I had been reading in Josephus, the subject naturally led us to consider the necessity of a more punctual and reverend observance of the Sabbath day, particularly as we were now furnished with the Holy Scriptures, and other books, to assist us in our devotion. He entirely agreed with me on the subject; and it was proposed, that every Sunday after breakfast we should read at my table, the creed, commandments, and Lord's prayer; then take a chapter in the Bible, beginning with the first; the same with the New Testament, and a portion of the Psalms; to end by singing a psalm, if we could accomplish it. Somer said he could sing several Dutch tunes, and we agreed to adapt them to the words as well as we could. This being settled, when the next Lord's day arrived, I desired Harry to collect the whole family. When they were all met, I took my place, and gave them strict charge not to make the least noise during the service, which was very solemnly observed till we came to the psalm; the parrots then began to hoot and sing at such a rate, as to disturb us greatly; and one of our dogs was equally troublesome; this was remedied in future by putting the culprits in durance

during the time of our devotional exercises. The serious and solemn behaviour of our women on these occasions cannot be too much praised, and gave us the greatest satisfaction.

Somer now contrived to make me a kind of desk to read at ; and we never omitted these religious duties, unless we were prevented by some unforeseen accident. It happened one Sunday when we were in the middle of the psalm which concluded the service, that three Indians, who had travelled by land, walked up towards the cave. On seeing how we were engaged, they halted and stood in a very serious attitude of attention till we had concluded the ceremony ; they then came forward and saluted us in a most friendly manner. Two of them were strangers to me, the other an old acquaintance, Gaynosanto ; one of the new-comers was named Owasotas, and a kind of half-brother to my wife, by two fathers, as she expressed it.

These Indians brought us seeds of tobacco from Owagamy, and a piccary they had shot. This we got dressed, and it made a plentiful repast for our friends.

I shall now take notice of something singular in regard to the Bible which I purchased of the old Irish captain. On the first unprinted leaf of this book was the following memorandum :

Samuel Shaddon was born May 4th, anno 1670.

Joseph Shaddon, his son, born in Westminster the 12th August, anno 1701.

Mary Shaddon was born 9th October, anno 1703.

Nicholas Shaddon, born on the 23d November, anno 1705.

Eleanor Shaddon, born on the 2d June, anno 1708.

On the inside of the cover was written the following extraordinary address :—“ Thomas, this is the last

and best favour you can possibly expect to receive from my aged hands ; remember it is my earnest and solemn request that you will peruse this book with the strictest attention. In the various accidents to which human life is subject, you may want comfort and consolation ; here you are sure to find them. Should friends forsake or the world frown upon you, you will here find an ample recompence. By the precepts contained in this book, you will learn to submit yourself to the chastening hand of your heavenly father ; you will gather from them strength and confidence to oppose the evils and misfortunes which may impede your passage through life, or to support yourself with christian fortitude and resignation under them ; you will learn that the inflictions of Providence are ultimately conducive to your eternal welfare ; for ' whom God chasteneth, he loveth.' Never part with it ; and if by constant use it should be so worn as to make it necessary to have it rebound, preserve the old covers on which this is written, in your family, in remembrance of the real affection of the donor, and the respect you owe to his memory, who wishes you all happiness.

"JAMES ROGERS, 1719."

About this time, as my wife and I were walking on the other side of the plantain walk, I desired her to observe a small bird, similar, as I told her, to one we had in my country of about the same size, called a wren. Nothing can exceed the beauty of these little creatures ; they go always in pairs, and though in their shape and magnitude they resemble the above-mentioned bird, yet their colours are much more beautiful. They are of a fine green, like the parrot ; and under

the throat is a large spot equal to the ruby in colour. They are not very shy, seldom mounting above the low shrubs. She told me her people called them manune, which signified mutual love; a name which very well described their affection for each other, being inseparable; wherever one pitches, the other alights by its side; they bill like pigeons, and give every indication of the strongest attachment to each other.

It is with real sorrow I relate the scene which speedily followed. As we were admiring them, I observed one of these little innocents begin to flutter its wings and chatter much, then run along the spray, and return to its mate. This I at first thought expressive of courtship or fondness; but shortly after, as it flew down to the ground, my wife pointed out to me a long and very slim yellow snake, which was coiled up with its head in the centre erected, and plying its tongue at a great rate. The poor little bird would run to and fro, fluttering with its wings, and making a sad noise, then fly up to its mate again; every time it came down it still drew nearer to the snake, which at last threw itself at its length, but still kept its head erect and directed towards the bird. My wife assured me I should soon see the snake open its mouth very wide, and then the bird would run and play close before it, when the snake would give a dart and take it in. However, this I did not believe, as the snake was so extremely small that I thought it impossible, and told her I was sure there was no fear of that. However, from the increased emotion of the one and the fierceness of the other, I was resolved to make all sure. I therefore seized a small twig with some warmth, and struck the snake athwart the neck,

which broke the enchantment, and restored my poor little innocent to its disconsolate mate, who sat all the time on the shrub crying, "Chip, chip," trembling, and to all appearance in a great agony. I congratulated myself on the relief I had given to this faithful pair, and began to feel some compunction at having suffered them to remain so long in a state of doubtful and dangerous distress, when it was in my power at any time to have relieved them from it. Indeed it was done partly to satisfy my mind as to the fact of fascination, which I had often heard asserted, but never had an opportunity before of convincing myself by actual experiment.

CHAPTER XXI.

ONE day as I was passing into our dwelling, I took notice of a white circle on the under side of the archway of the cavern: as I had not observed it before, I was not a little curious to find out the cause. On viewing it with some attention, I observed now and then a kind of brown wasp come in with a bit of the same matter and fix it to the circle, by this means enlarging its dimensions; so that from about three inches diameter, in the course of a few days it was the size of a large punch-bowl. They now began to narrow it again, giving it somewhat the form of a bottle with a projecting neck, still working downwards, so that by the time it was finished it was near a foot in length, leaving only a small hole sufficient for

one to enter at a time. The women wanted to knock it down, lest they might sting the children; but I forbade them.

When some time after I found all the wasps had forsaken it, I bid Harry cut it down carefully with a knife; and when I came to examine the internal structure, nothing could be more curious. The cells were ranged circularly, one within the other, so that it formed one complete spiral line; in substance it resembled our coarse white paper, but much stronger, and did not weigh above an ounce or two at most.

There is a sort of insect here of a very odd form, being in length about four inches, yet so very slim in one part that is not much thicker than a small thread; it has eight very long legs, and two horns six inches in length, tapering to such a small point, that it is as fine as the lines of a cobweb to appearance. The whole insect, wings and all, is the colour of the fine steel of the watch-spring; but what is more singular is its smell—no rose can have a finer scent. It has the power of folding up these horns in joints, or can at pleasure lay them both flat at length backwards in a direct line.

There is another sort which resembles a wasp, but three times its size, and in colour like amber, with a yellow head. I never could see above one of them at a time. Its manner of life differs from that of other insects of the same class; it burrows in any dry and sandy place, to the depth of a foot or more; to this kind of cell he brings all his prey, being very voracious after all sorts of flies, which he catches either on the wing, or by stratagem, when they are on a leaf. Having two legs longer than the rest, he carries his prey between his feet, and, by a movement in the

joints of those two long legs, he poises the load if it proves rather heavy. When he brings home his prey and has descended below, you shall hear a kind of noise the whole time, like a person drawing the bow of a fiddle over the smaller strings ; when this stops, you may expect his return. On his coming up he proceeds to work with his two long feet backward, and in a short time covers the entrance so curiously that the place is not to be observed ; and should you make any alteration so as to deceive him, yet has he the sagacity soon to find it out. I have opened several of these repositories, and have found at the bottom several small cells, in each of which were found insects of different kinds.

Now we are on the subject of insects, I will mention another sort with which we were sometimes amused. It was a kind of large beetle, of a black colour. This insect, whenever it finds the dung of any animal, or other kind of pulpy offal, there takes up its residence until the whole be consumed ; but as the manner of providing for itself is somewhat curious, I shall give it to the reader. It always flies by night, or late in the evening, and has a wonderful instinct in finding out the above-mentioned substances ; and if the surface of the earth be not too hard, it begins to work down through the centre of the mass to a considerable depth, bringing up the loose earth : this it lays all on one side till it has completed the work ; then it begins to gather it up, as one would do hay or straw. When it has as much as it can grasp, it walks backward with it to the edge of the hole, throws itself backward, load and all, and thus tumbles to the bottom of its cell ; it then returns again, and acts in the same manner till it has industriously collected the whole.

If you dig down some time after, you shall find the whole mass curiously made up into a round ball, and very closely packed together. When you break this ball, in the centre is to be seen its young embryo ; and as that comes to maturity, its food is already provided, and it begins to eat the internal part ; the old one does the same by the external ; so that by the time they have eaten up the whole, the young one is become capable of providing for itself. But if the quantity should prove too small, the old one goes in search of more, and flies home with it to the cell, continually, till the young has acquired sufficient strength to go abroad. It then carries the young black bantling in its arms, as I may say, and leaves it to provide for itself, having discharged all the duties of a parent.

To return to my Journal. About the latter end of August, Harry had a daughter born, and he chose she should be called Luta, after my poor wife, his sister. As Somer and I were joking together about providing a fortune for our children out of the treasure we had found, which, considering it as of little use in our present situation, we called dross, Owen happened to stand by us at the time listening to our discourse, and said, " Father, there is dross of that kind in the great Bible book."

" I know that," said I ; thinking he meant the clasps.

" No, not the clasps," he said.

" Hold your foolish tongue," I cried.

" Indeed, father," said the boy, " there is dross in the boards of it."

" Indeed !" said I. " Well, then, Somer, let us examine into this."

When we came to open the bible, the child at once

shewed us the place within the cover, where I could plainly see something shining, which, on examination, I found to be a piece of coin. I then went to work, got it out, and found it to be a moidore; and on further search found a range of them: we then turned up the other lid, and found the same. This made us pause and look at each other.

"Now," said I, "I perfectly understand what the author of those lines written in the cover intended by the precaution of not parting with it; had old Organ been wise enough to fathom this, he would not have suffered me to make the purchase." Somer laughed heartily at this. In both covers there were not less than sixty moidores.

Perhaps this book had been presented to a spendthrift; and the giver had ingeniously taken this method to supply his wants, when, by his application to this book, his mind might be in a better state to receive the benefit; little thinking that it would ever find its way to this remote part of the world, and fall into the hands of persons who could actually make no use of it, and would prize the book infinitely beyond the riches of the cover.

Soon after this a droll circumstance happened. As Harry and I were walking in the woods, I observed a kind of vine growing up a large tree, and hung full of a kind of beans. I asked him if they were fit to eat? He said the Indians ate them sometimes. The pods of these beans were a foot in length, and about the breadth of a Windsor bean, but much flatter, and the bean small in proportion to the pod. As they were nearly ripe, we gathered a handful or two, and carried them home. I then stripped them, and stowed them away in a locker that Somer had made. It hap-

pened a few days after that I seated myself on this box, when, on a sudden, such a loud report went off, that I got up and ran out, quite surprised. The women came to inquire what the noise meant; but on Harry's lifting up the lid of the locker, we were saluted with such a volley, some of them jumped out, and all together made so great a clatter, that our peaceable dwelling was like a stormed battery.

On the 4th of December, as Patty and Jessy were on the hill gathering some leaves to cure a burn, they came down in a hurry, and informed us that there were many large boats on the water. We ran up the hill, and saw seven large vessels, with three others of a smaller size, all standing to the east. They were very far out, so I took my glass and found them to be large ships, and the smaller ones with two masts. As the wind was at west, and but little of it, they remained in sight for several hours, and in the evening we heard a gun. Harry and I then took another look, and found them all huddled together. Early the next day we went up again, and could but just discern them with the glass; and in about two hours lost sight of them entirely. I have no doubt but it was a squadron of king's ships, and most probably belonging to Spain. The next day we saw a large sloop standing the same way, which I suppose belonged to them.

Somer now took it into his head that they were in search of us, upon the information of the Irish captain, or some of his people. I bid him never fear that. We were not of sufficient consequence to excite so much attention. It was hardly worth the viceroy's while to fit out a squadron for no better purpose than to rout a couple of poor jack-tars. If they had a mind to attack us, a small armed launch would be quite

sufficient to do our business ; therefore we need not give ourselves the least uneasiness on this subject.

Now, though my reason was fully satisfied with what I told him, yet I must confess, when I heard the gun, and saw them all huddled together, my mind was hurried, and I felt something like fear that we might some way or other be the objects of their attention. The moment I began to exercise my judgment upon it, every apprehension was at once discarded. Had they known of our treasure, our fears might not have been wholly groundless ; and then, indeed, as that treasure would have been their only object, they would have taken what was of no use to us, and have left us naked and happy as before.

Once or twice a-year we were visited by numbers of pigeons of two sorts, viz. bald-pates and sprig-tails. I should have mentioned them before, but for want of ammunition I could never reach them ; so they passed unheeded. The bald-pates, as I call them, did not breed with us, as I believe ; for I never could discover any of their nests. The bird is small, and coal-black, except the poll or scalp, that being quite white, the feet and bill crimson, with red circles round the eyes. The sprig-tail is a very fine bird, about the size of the English wood-pigeon or quist, and much resembles that species. When they fly, the tail appears as terminating in one long point. These birds are so swift of flight, that it is almost impossible to follow them with the eye ; and if I was to mention the distance I think they will make in a minute, it would seem incredible. The Indians assert they can fly above one thousand miles in twenty-four hours, without once resting. Owagamy told me their people had shot them, with a kind of red berry quite fresh in them,

early in a morning; which berries were not to be met with within two moons' walk of their place, far away to the south-west.

Now I am speaking of these birds, I will mention another species of pigeon, or partridge, for it seems to partake of each kind. In size it is like the partridge, short and full; but as to its colours, I have not words to express their beautiful variety, many of which change as you look at them, with the slightest motion. The Indians call it a deceiver, and with some propriety. They are never to be seen in any exposed place, but in the hilly country, among rocks and bushes. They take but a short flight, as they depend much on running; and are so exceedingly subtle, that if they are pursued, they will squat behind any small stone, so that you may know to an inch where the bird is, yet cannot shoot it; therefore they must be taken either running or on the wing, no other means answering the purpose. These birds are very excellent dainties.

About the end of December my shipmate Somer began to fall off again; and he declined so fast, that in a very short time he became nothing but skin and bone. I knew not what to do; I had not skill enough to give him any relief. At length, however, by Harry's advice, I proposed they should take a journey to visit the Indians, thinking the change of air might prove of some benefit to him. He was pleased with the proposal, and soon after, having gained a little strength, undertook the journey. I was unwilling to part with him, and yet it appeared this excursion was the only chance of recovering his health. I had a sincere regard for him, and would have given all our hidden treasure to have restored him. Harry was to

accompany him; and when the time of their departure came, he earnestly requested me, if he should not live to return, to be a father to his child. I made him easy, by giving him every assurance of my most affectionate regard, and that I would discharge the trust as truly as if it was my own child. On the morrow they prepared to depart, not without the greatest concern on all sides. I proposed that he should take his wife Eva with him, and the child, as perhaps she might prove of service in the journey. This was agreed to, and they went off tolerably cheerful. I had enough to do to administer consolation to those who remained. Where the society is but of one family, the attachments are very strong: Patty and Job were in great lamentation; my son in tears; and Harry the worst of all, for he had a sincere affection, almost amounting to veneration, for Somer, which was returned with equal tenderness. Having lost our very sincere friend, it was some time before we could return to our usual occupations with any tolerable composure; when necessity did not require immediate exertion, we moped about without object or employment. I made frequent and melancholy reflections, that perhaps I might never see my friend's face more. I was sorry that I had proposed the journey which separated us, though expressly for his benefit; perhaps he might die in the woods, and might want my assistance when I was far from him. These and a thousand other tormenting thoughts haunted my fancy, and made me at times extremely miserable. My wife did every thing to cheer and comfort me, and to her kind attentions I was indebted for the little tranquillity I enjoyed.

Thus was I forced to drag my time along. Patty

was greatly dejected ; she had now two young children. As I expected to hear from or see them in about a month, when that time had elapsed I became very uneasy ; considering that he was dead—that he had yielded his last breath far from home, and without the possibility of my performing the last mournful offices for him. This affected me greatly. It happened about this time that my wife roused me suddenly in the night, saying she heard a conch. I started up to light a torch, then called Patty. I was fearful my wife had been dreaming, and questioned her on the subject. She said she had certainly heard it, and could not be deceived, as she was broad awake. I took a shell and gave a loud blast ; shortly after it was answered from a great distance. An ugly thought now perplexed my mind, that probably this sound might not proceed from friends. When this once took possession of me, it almost rendered me incapable of action. Presently I heard the sound again ; I then at once made up my mind to the exigence, and determined to wait the issue with manly fortitude. By this time the morning began to peep, which gave me new spirits. I ordered a good fire to be made up, and then gave another blast, which was presently answered, and by the sound I knew they were not far off. We stood by the fire for some time, then sounded again, and were answered as from the lagoon. On this I gave a shout, and was answered by Harry's well-known voice. We all ran down immediately to the landing-place, and waited till they came in. The first who jumped on shore was Owagamy. It was now so light that I could distinguish the number of persons, though not perfectly recognize them. I called

out with great impatience, "Where is my shipmate Somer?"

"Here he is," cried Harry.

He then landed. My heart was so full I could not speak; I took him in my arms; I could not express myself then, nor can I now describe of what kind my sensations were for the moment. A painful yet pleasurable tumult occupied my senses; I had neither eyes nor ears but for the object before me; yet was there a certain confusion in my ideas that deprived me of the faculty of expressing the satisfaction I felt for his return. I led him to my habitation; and as I began to recover myself to my great surprise I saw another white man, a Spaniard as I believed. This startled me much; but the pleasure I now began to express for my friend's return absorbed every other consideration, and I took no further notice at the time. Somer then told me that he had been much worse, or should have returned sooner; but he was resolved, whether his time was long or short, that he would live and die with me his good friend.

I now began to consider that the secret of my residence on this coast was discovered to the Spaniards, and that all hope of future comfort was banished for ever. I put the best face I could on the matter, and asked Harry how many were in company with him: he said, ten. "Welcome all," I replied. Then taking the Spaniard, as I conceived him to be, by the hand, said, "And, pray, who is this stranger?"

What was my astonishment when he answered me himself in plain English, "A poor unfortunate wanderer, long lost to all comfort."

"The more welcome to my peaceful habitation,"

cried I ; "I took you for a Spaniard ; you may judge how agreeably I am surprised to find you my own countryman. You will now consider yourself as one of my family ; but, pray, what part of Great Britain gave you birth ?"

"I was born in the shire of Buchan," said he ; "my name is Norman Bell."

"Well, then," replied I, "my good friend, make yourself easy here ; you are under my protection ; and if in any thing I can contribute to your future happiness, you may at all times command my best services."

At this moment my affections were so divided amongst my family, that I scarcely knew how to conduct myself. Patty and Job were overjoyed ; poor Eva was recounting her troubles to Jessy, with tears in her eyes ; my new friend gazing around like a man on enchanted ground ; Owagamy and others were chatting with my wife, and little Owen and Harry were busy explaining every thing to the rest. Such was the scene before me. It was now broad day. I desired Patty to get some water in one of the yabbas, and then made some weak toddy to refresh the travellers. When presented to Bell, he declined it, saying he had not touched any spirits for a very long time. The rest regaled themselves. My wife prepared them beds of palmetto leaves, on which they slept soundly and pleasantly. I told Harry that in consequence of so large a company he must go to the crawl for turtle ; which he did with another Indian, and when they returned it was killed and dressed for our entertainment.

When my two friends, Somer and Bell, were awakened, I joined them, and we went together to the Indians. I was resolved to give the latter as much of my company as possible, to prevent any jealousy that I was

willing to pay more respect to those of my own colour than to them. Somer said he found himself in an unusual flow of spirits, a sensation he had not felt for a long time: this exhilarated me likewise; and after our meal, we all enjoyed our pipes together, and were the largest company of puffers that had been collected at one time at my habitation since my first landing. I asked Mr. Bell how long he had been with our good friends the Indians? He said, not above three weeks; and had enjoyed more comfort during that time, by the conversation with my friend Somer, than for many years past. He added, that he had given him so favourable an opinion of me, that he had a great desire to see me.

I now took an opportunity and shewed to Owagamy some of the teeth we had found, and desired to have his opinion concerning them. They were handed all round the company; and after they had conferred together for some time in their own language, Owagamy told Harry that both his father and himself had seen them often, and that he knew of a deep valley wherein were many of them, but it was far to the south. He never could learn that any of their old people had seen one of the animals alive; but it was reported that they had white horns as long as an Indian, for that some old people related they had seen the horns, particularly one called old Wariboon, a great hunter, who had kept one of them a long time by him; but as he lived at a great distance from them, they had never seen it. Upon this an Indian, whose name was Kayoota, said his father had seen it so many times, holding up his fingers. From all which we gathered that the beast in question must be an elephant, and that the horns they mentioned were the teeth of the animal. How the race became extinct we could not divine, unless the natives

had, at some remote time, combined together to extirpate them. And this seemed to be almost impossible, as the continent was so very extensive, and the inhabitants at any time but thinly scattered over the face of it, and many of them thousands of miles asunder. Such an agreement, therefore, could hardly ever have taken place between tribes so widely separated from each other, and without any common centre of union.

CHAPTER XXII.

FOURTEENTH YEAR OF MY RESIDENCE.

NOTHING worthy of recording happened from the time my new friend Bell came to reside with us. It was now the month of June, and by my computation I had been here thirteen years complete. I shall now give a short account of him, as I had it from his own mouth. His father, Angus Bell, was born in West Lothian, and had travelled the country as a pedlar. He died when his son was but ten years of age. Soon after his father's death, he was placed with a carpenter in the shire of Fife, his mother being from those parts. When he was about fifteen he ran away, and got on board a vessel that traded to the east country. After that he took several trips from Aberdeen to London. During the war he went several cruizes, was taken and carried into St. Maloes, where he lay in prison a long time, and amused himself during his imprisonment, by learning to play on the German flute of a fellow-prisoner, whose name was James Alexander, a country-

man of his. When an exchange took place, he came again to London, and entered on board a ship bound for New York. On his return, having a great inclination to music, he practised the French horn and trumpet, and, by a foolish prank of wrestling, received a hurt on his back which rendered him unfit to follow the sea at that time.

Some time after this he fell in with a set of puppet-show people, who, finding he could blow the French horn and trumpet, engaged him in their service. He very speedily rose to the dignity of Merry Andrew, and travelled over a great part of England, Wales, and Ireland, in their company. Being fond of variety, his next engagement was with a quack doctor; he travelled two years with him in the same capacity, and took every opportunity of shewing off his tricks for the benefit of his master and himself. He said he was an excellent mimic, and could with ease take off the French, Dutch, Irish, Welch, &c. &c. Being now perfectly cured of his strain, and coming to the city of Bristol, his inclination for the sea again prevailed; he shipped himself, was once more taken by the French, and carried into Leogane, where he lay so long in prison, that, in order to procure his liberty, he engaged with one Captain Raiz, a Spaniard, then bound to Cartagena. With him he continued for some time, and went afterwards to Maracaybo; from which place he followed the coasting trade, and chance brought him acquainted with an old Irishman, named M'Gill, under whom he studied, and made some proficiency in the Spanish language. The old man told him one day, that if he had an inclination to be married he could recommend him to a good match, and he was pretty sure he would succeed, as he had heard the person ex-

press as much when he was sounding with Pantoga's trumpet. "I suppose you mean Maria Bela, the mulatto girl?" "Yes," he replied, "and she is possessed of four or five slaves, a good house, and money likewise."

He took the old man's advice, and speedily married her; he lived very happily with her about five years, and then the Padres were very troublesome with him on the score of religion, trying by every possible means to draw him to their persuasion. He, however, resisted all their importunities; but little thought what a cloud was hanging over his head, ready to burst, and involve him in destruction. He had for some time suspected his wife's fidelity; and one day as he was returning from a sloop he had purchased, his suspicions were in a degree confirmed, that Father Martin was somewhat more than confessor to his lady. The high reputation and power of this priest enjoined him to silence from the most prudential motives; however, he took the first opportunity his wife gave him of remonstrating with her, and inveighed against the reverend father for his hypocrisy, in no very qualified terms. This effusion of his justifiable resentment against the reverend father confessor, was not lost upon his unworthy partner; she treasured up every word of it, and gave it again to the Padre, with some slight additions and variations to answer her purpose. From this moment he was never suffered to enjoy one moment's peace. His obstinacy in resisting the pious exhortations of the fathers, in respect to his religious principles, was represented to his superiors in the most unfavourable colours; his heretical opinions were considered as injurious to the state, and a plot was laid to deprive him of

his liberty, if not of his life. Having good intelligence of what was going forward, he resolved to give them the slip, and have a fair run for it. To carry this scheme into execution, it was necessary to veil his purpose under the appearance and profession of the most profound submission to the reverend fathers, and by expressing a willingness to take their arguments for his conversion into his most serious consideration. Crafty and cunning as they were, he had the art of completely deceiving them ; and about the time he was to have been received into the bosom of the holy church, with due formality, he disguised himself, and by a hasty and successful flight put an end to his hypocrisy and their persecution. He left his fair rib without the slightest compunction, and under various characters travelled some thousand miles. Having health, spirits, and a fund of humour, he continued to make himself well received every where ; he could sing, play, and perform a number of tricks ; he passed for an Italian, and gave himself the name of Giovannetti : sometimes he put on the air of a slighted lover, and would sing love-sonnets, and accompany himself ; at other times he would tell merry tales, and divert his hearers with romantic accounts of his travels and adventures. Thus he rambled about for four years, until chance brought him at length among our Indians, where finding my friend Somer, he determined to pay me a visit, and take up his residence with me, if agreeable.

When his story was concluded, I told him, that having paddled the hoof so long, a place of rest and quiet might not be unpleasant to him. He had seen enough of the varieties of life, and had drunk deep of the intoxicating beverage of short-lived pleasure. He ac-

knowledged the justice of my remark, and added, "Indeed, Mr. Penrose, you may believe me, I have sowed my wild oats, and have long since laid all my follies aside ; I trust you will not find me an unpleasant, nor wholly an unprofitable companion."

I then took the opportunity of telling him, that doubtless in his travels he had collected a variety of nostrums ; that poor Somer was extremely ill ; and if he knew of any simple remedy that would at all relieve him, he could not do me a greater favour than by administering it. He said that to flatter me in such a case as this would only add to my distress. He saw plainly that my friend was in a deep decline, and to preserve his life for any length of time he thought impossible. It was true he was well acquainted with the virtues of many American plants and roots, and would use his best endeavours to give him as much ease as possible ; but cautioned me not to flatter myself into a conceit of his recovery, by the appearance of some favourable symptoms at times ; this was the nature of his disorder ; but that he would linger away by degrees, and go off perhaps when I least expected it. This gave me great pain, as I had a sincere value for him, and had so long enjoyed his agreeable society.

Mr. Bell was a strong, cheerful, and healthy man ; but my poor friend Somer wasted away daily. Yet he continually thought himself getting better, and would sometimes say, when I get a little stronger I will do so and so ; but in fact he grew, imperceptibly to himself, weaker and weaker every day. At length he became quite a living skeleton ; his skin turned to a dark-brown, and sometimes livid ; his trowsers would hardly keep on him ; his eyes became exceedingly hollow, with a fixed kind of stare ; and his lips were so

shrunk that he became a most ghastly object, and it made my heart bleed to look at him. Whenever he drank, we could hear the liquid rattle within him ; his poor stomach was so depraved, that he would long to eat things, which, when brought to him, he could not touch ; yet he continued to walk about. At last he gave up his darling pipe, and grew exceedingly peevish and fretful, although when in health I do not remember a sweeter tempered creature. Nothing we could procure would now please him. We bore with it all with the most generous patience ; every one was ready to exert himself to the utmost to procure him the slightest alleviation. He took a fancy to some fish-broth ; I made him some, and took it him ; he was then on my bed in the cave ; he raised himself up and began to eat of it heartily, praising it much. He finished near a pint of it. I then asked him how he found himself ? He made me no reply, but, fixing his eyes against the other side as if he saw something, in an instant he threw the spoon against it violently, then falling back, made an odd kind of hollow sound, and expired.

This scene was almost too much for me. I turned out of the cave, and reclined with my head against the rock like a person stupefied. No one knew of the event but myself. Bell seeing me in this situation guessed what had happened. He went in and found his conjecture right. He informed Harry, and desired that I might not be disturbed. The melancholy news was soon communicated to my whole family, and great lamentation was made. If ever true grief was shewn, it was on this occasion. Thus died my worthy and lamented friend, on the 21st day of August, 1760, having lived with me in perfect brotherly love more than six years. During that time he had been the partaker

of my joys and my sorrows ; he had made it his study to co-operate with me in every thing to promote the good of our little society, and was always the first to propose whatever might increase our domestic felicity. His constant flow of spirits and good-humour enlivened every scene ; he lessened our difficulties by cheerfully sharing them ; and our social hours were rendered brighter by the sprightliness of his wit, and the amiable frankness of his manners. My chief consolation was, that I had contributed to the quiet enjoyment of his latter days, by every friendly exertion in my power.

It now appeared to me that I was beginning a new course. I had lost my steady and faithful friend Somer ; to Bell's temper and disposition I was yet a stranger ; my family were filled with the most unfeigned sorrow ; and my little Owen's innocent yet affectionate remarks on many friendly actions of my deceased friend often brought tears into my eyes. I had now enough upon my mind. Harry prepared a resting-place for poor Somer's remains. We conveyed them to the grave with decent solemnity, and committed them to the earth with the prayers and tears of my whole family. When the ceremony was concluded, we returned home. My family seated themselves in melancholy attitudes around me. After some pause, I broke silence. Addressing myself to Mr. Bell, I ran over the many good qualities of my departed friend, and then intimated that I looked upon him as the successor appointed by Providence to fill his place ; that as one island had given us birth, I hoped he would never fall from that integrity, so long held by a man who was not my countryman ; who had learned in the school of

adversity to know himself, and to exercise Christian benevolence to his fellow-creatures in a similar state of affliction. He returned me for answer, that he should always think it his duty to concur with my desires, as the only recompense in his power for the generosity of my conduct to him; and that he would seek all opportunities to render my life and that of my family easy and agreeable to the utmost of his power.

For some time after this we passed our leisure hours in reading; and I found my new companion a very agreeable, sensible man, so that by degrees I recovered my spirits. Eva, who had very sincerely lamented her husband's death, became of a sudden more dejected than usual; she would separate from us and keep aloof by herself. I knew not what to make of it. Some time had now passed since her husband's death, and if she had not entirely recovered her usual spirits, she was at least placid and serene; therefore we could not look to that as the cause of her present uneasiness. I spoke to my wife on the subject; she at length told me she had picked the secret out of Patty. Eva had told her, in their metaphorical language, that the vine of unity was now broken by her husband's death, and that we should soon look upon her and her child as a dead tree and a withered branch of no further use; therefore, if Mr. Bell would not take her for his wife, she was resolved to go back to her own people again.

"A pretty piece of business this!" said I. "What is to be done I know not, unless Bell should himself express any inclination that way. I can never propose it to him. We shall see what time and opportunity may do."

Soon after this, Bell talked of going out with Harry to catch guanos. Thinking this a favourable opportunity, I desired Betty to give Harry a lesson how to sound him on the subject. She did so, and they set off accordingly. On their return, I made an inquiry how the proposal was received, and found it had been rejected altogether. Bell had declared himself so thoroughly dissatisfied with his first matrimonial connection, that he had determined not to engage himself again. This being the case, I said, if Eva's inclination to revisit her country still continued, she should return with the first party of her friends that came to visit us.

Thus matters continued for some time. I must here mention a circumstance which happened a few days before my poor friend Somer's death. Several large birds, of the vulture kind, came and settled on a large old dead tree near our habitation. The nearer his end approached, the greater number of birds came, and remained to the hour of his death. No sooner was he departed than they all took wing, and kept floating in a circular manner until night, then alighted again; but when the body was buried, they all left the place, and not one remained behind. These birds are of a most voracious disposition, and of wonderful sagacity. It is said they will scent a dying person at an incredible distance, and are sure to be seen as soon as the event has happened, if not sooner. For some time before my friend died, his breath had been very offensive; whether they had been drawn together by this effluvia I know not, but to the fact of their being there I was a witness.

This bird is about the size of a young turkey, of
s 2

a black colour, and has those singular excrescences round the neck like that fowl. They never kill their prey, but patiently wait till the animal is dead ; and as they know the time to an instant, they at once drop down from the tree, if any be near ; one always begins upon the carcase singly, eats the eyes and the fundament, then leaves it, and the rest fall on and devour it entirely before they leave the place. When I was at Jamaica, where there are plenty of them, I was informed that a law was enacted, under a penalty of five pounds, against the shooting of one of them, as they were found serviceable in clearing off all carrion. I made Harry shoot one of them that I might make a fair examination of it, as he said their stomachs were full of large worms ; and I actually found it so. What is very surprising, when I came to take up the bird it did not weigh much more than a pound, being little else than bone and feathers, and, what is very singular, to all appearance it had no tongue.

CHAPTER XXIII.

I ONE day found Eva weeping over the grave of her husband. I endeavoured to soothe and comfort her ; she muttered a few words about her child, held it up to me, and again wept bitterly. I was soon made acquainted with the cause of this affliction. She believed, because the father of her child was a white man, that when she returned with her countrymen we would not permit her to take the child with her. I gave the fullest assurance that no such thing was intended ; that she should certainly take it with her ; but that it would give me much more pleasure if she was to stay with us, and become the wife of my new friend Bell : this, however, must depend upon his inclinations, over which I had no control. Mr. Bell from time to time grew more familiar with her, and took occasion to cheer her in the best manner he could, telling her that he did not reject her person, for he liked her very well ; but as he had been unfortunate in his first choice, he wished to remain single ; and there was no doubt but she would meet with a good husband among her own people.

Things remained in this state until the arrival of four Indians who had been out on a journey, and paid us a visit on their return. These were Vatte-queba, Gatta-loon, and Wocozo-many, with a youth called Outa-harry, his son. The two last had never been at

our place before. We received them in the most friendly manner ; and the next day I desired my wife and Harry to break to them the affair concerning Eva. This they did ; and I observed the Indians began to look very serious. Soon after, Harry came to me, and said Gatta-loon wanted to make a speech to me.

“ Tell him I am ready to hear him,” said I.

On this he advanced towards me, as it appeared in a hostile angry manner, and throwing out his right arm, with one leg advanced, he began to deliver his oration. This took up a long time ; and his behaviour during the continuance of it was lofty and heroic ; every now and then he would appeal to his comrades, who all answered together with a short word as one voice. When he had closed his speech, I desired Harry to give me the substance of it, in the best manner he could ; which he did thus : “ You far water stranger, your skin is whiter than ours ; white, like the moon shining in the night ; can you expect our actions to be whiter than yours ? What are the things I know, I hear, I see ? Has not the wind of voices gone through the trees, and by the side of the shore, that my brothers and sisters have given their flesh and their blood to mix with yours ? Shew me more friendship than this, and we then shall own it is whiter than ours. Now we hear the voice in the wind saying, Oh ! the blackness is coming with the bird which devours the dead. Must we not all go to sleep ? Does not the bird of death pick the flesh from the bones ? Our sister here, shall she return without the covering of affection, because her love is gone to sleep ? Could she keep him awake any longer ? or, tell us, did she put him to sleep ? You will say, No, no, no. Awaken again his spirit, as it is in your power, that she may once more

find joy and laughing hours ; lest the wind carry the sound of black sorrow among our people, and so they should forget their way to this place."

During the time Harry was giving us the substance of this oration, my friend Bell stood with his arms folded, and his face to the ground. When it was finished, he walked backwards and forwards in great agitation ; and, observing the impression of great trouble in my countenance, he came up to me and said, " Let me not be, for one moment, the cause of disquiet to my friend." Then going to Eva, he took her by the hand, and leading her up to Gatta-loon, took his hand likewise, and led them both up to me. He then began thus : " Observe me well, I now declare before you all, that in order to make up all differences, and to unite us all together by the strongest ties of friendship and love, I do now take Eva as my wife." Then, kissing her, said, " Tell your good friends that you accept me for your husband ; and tell them likewise, Harry, that I will do my best endeavours to drive away all the black sorrow ; and the voice in the winds shall inform them that I have roused the spirit of our departed friend in my own bosom, for the comfort of their sister, whom I have taken to be my wife."

I desired Harry to explain at once to our friends every thing that Bell had declared. The effects were soon visible, as every countenance was illuminated with joy. I took him by the hand, and thanked him for his willingness to make us all happy, and told him that he could not give me a kinder proof of his attachment than by this generous conduct. We now determined to spend the remainder of the day with our friends in mirth and innocent jollity. They seemed fully sa-

tisfied with our attentions to them, and heartily joined in the general festivity.

The next day the Indians took their leave of us, and went away in good spirits. It was now the middle of December, and Bell proposed that we should make a new crawl for our turtle, within the mouth of our home lagoon, before the next season came on. This I approved of much, and he, with Harry, went to work about it. This business took up about a fortnight of their time.

One day while my two messmates were down at the new crawl, as I was removing some things from the interior part of the cave, Bell's little budget fell down open at my feet. The contents were as follow: A clasp knife; a razor and hone; a lancet, and some other trifles. There was likewise a small rag made up very curiously, which I did not choose to unloose, for fear it might give him offence; therefore left it as I found it. When he came home, I asked him what was tied up so carefully in that rag.

"You shall see," said he; and he ran to fetch it. He took some pains to undo all the foldings, and then shewed me a stone about the size of a common sleeve-button, which he told me was a valuable diamond; that he purchased it of an Indian from the Rio de la Plata for fifteen pieces of eight. There were in the rag four more, but of much smaller size. As I had never seen any thing of the kind in its natural state, I should have put but small value upon it; but he told me it was worth at least one thousand pounds.

"Well, then," said I, "you are a very rich man, not worth one farthing."

On this he gave a Spanish shrug with his shoulders,

and made use of a common phrase among those people, “*Totus une, tam bien.*”

I must here remark that he had so much the air and accent of a Spaniard, that I should never have suspected him to be of any other nation. Having been so long among them, he had contracted all their habits and manners; and his complexion being very dark, and his hair long and black, gave him quite the appearance of a native Spaniard.

Thus our time passed on smoothly. Norman Bell was quite satisfied with his wife; and we were altogether become a happy family. We should have found things much otherwise if any ill blood had subsisted between us and the Indians our neighbours. About this time I had a mind to learn whether Harry or Somer had ever informed Bell respecting our treasure. I began, therefore, by dropping hints about the pirates, and of their custom of hiding money, &c. He said he had learned enough about them from the Spaniards; but I found he was quite ignorant of my secret. One morning as he was busy with his razor and hone, I asked him what he would take for his diamonds in ready cash. He smiled at this, and said, “Do you know any jeweller in the neighbourhood who would purchase them?”

“Yes,” said I, “I do. Suppose I am the jeweller, what would you value them at? Will you let me have them on paying down five hundred dollars for them?”

“I should be glad we were safe in England with such a sum each,” said he.

“Without trifling, are they mine or not, for what I have offered?” I replied.

“Yes, yes,” he cried, and put them into my hands; saying, “Now, down with the dollars.”

"Come with me to my counting-house, then," said I. He looked astonished, and seemed to wonder what would come next. I took him by the hand to lead him away.

"You are in a merry humour to-day," he replied.

To keep him no longer in suspense, I disclosed all my treasure to him. When he cast his eyes over it, he was so struck that he could not express his astonishment.

"The diamonds are mine, messmate," said I. "There is cash sufficient to discharge the contract."

"Troth, man, that is true; but how came ye by it?"

I then gave him the whole story, and bid him call for his cash as soon as he pleased, as it was ready for him at any time.

"Troth, man," said he, "it is as safe in your bank there as in any other part I can remove it to; so e'en let it remain."

"Well, then, as you see I have money enough to pay for them, take them and put them up in your pack again. What is mine is equally yours."

He squeezed me by the hand, and begged permission to throw his jewels into the general stock. Thus ended our friendly treaty.

On the 9th day of February my wife brought me a couple of fine children at a birth; the women were all greatly pleased with the novelty, and were very profuse in their congratulations on the occasion. There was now some little altercation among them, as to what names should be given to the children, the one being a boy, the other a girl. Upon this I said, to do my wife honour, we would call the girl by the name of her country, America. She was much pleased with this,

and said, if I was willing, she would give the boy a name that she knew would please me.

"Well then," said I, "be it so; what shall he be called?"

"Somer," she replied.

"Thou art a good creature," I said; "nothing could be more agreeable to me; it was the name of a good man, and I hope it will be preserved amongst us to our latest generation, and that my son will never disgrace it."

I now began to think we should be more secure and comfortable, by some little fence before the entrance of our dwelling; and one day Norman being out in the wood cutting a few poles for that purpose, he came flying down the hill in a terrible fright, crying and bawling out, "Harry, Harry! messmate!" I ran out, and asked him what was the matter.

"Oh!" said he, "here's the De'il coming down the brae, as fast as the wind."

I at once snatched up my gun, and desired to know where it was. Harry ran for his maschut, and the women scrambled away with the children. "Come, come," said I to Bell, "take up that little hatchet and follow us." So away we went together up the hill, but could discover nothing.

"Where is your De'il, Norman?" said I.

"I am sure," he replied, "I saw a terrible large tiger, or leopard, such as I have before seen at shows of wild beasts in England."

Just then Harry cried out, "There he is yonder, over the cleft behind the grove."

I immediately fired, but missed. I then ran down and brought up a shell; the others did the same, and the moment we began to sound the shells he quitted

the field, and we saw no more of him. During all this hurry, Harry said he was sure he had heard a shell at a distance. I thought he was mistaken; but he was positive, and said he would go and look out. He did, and soon cried out, "Boats! canoes!" We then ascended ourselves, and plainly discovered three canoes. I immediately ordered the yawl to be got ready, and hoisted our colours; then leaving the women, down we went to meet them. As they came near, we gave them three cheers, and began to sing as usual; they answered, but not so heartily, I thought, as in times past: however, we preceded them up the lagoon, and then landing, I received my friend Owagamy in the most friendly manner possible; Bell and Harry did the same by all the rest. They were nine in number, and all armed, which was not their general custom. After we had given them some liquor out of the little that remained in store, I called for our pipes, but they declined the offer; I began to dread the consequences, as I saw plainly a storm was ready to burst. After a short silence, Owagamy, beginning to survey the place round, over each shoulder, asked some questions of Harry. I began to grow a little warm, knowing we did not deserve this treatment, and boldly bade Harry tell me at once what was the matter, and what it was that Owagamy enquired after? He said it was whether we all lived in peace and love together; and that he had informed him, never more so: Owagamy then replied, that was well.

"Tell Eva to stand forth," said I; "and if she has any complaint to make, or any grievance on her mind, let her declare it before them all."

Owagamy then questioned her a few words, when I observed him cast his eyes on Normam, and smile.

"Now, now, merry all," said Harry.

"How so?" I replied.

"Because she tell how Norman love her very well."

I then desired my wife to give her friends a full account of the affair from first to last; of my friend's first objections, and his ready compliance afterwards; which I supposed would fully satisfy him. She did as I desired; and having ended her narration, Owagamy burst into a fit of laughter, and all the Indians did the like. Upon my inquiry into the cause, Owagamy led up to me Eva's brother, whom I had not before seen, and made him join hands with Bell and me, to testify good fellowship between us. I then asked Harry what made them laugh so. He said Owagamy accused Eva of making all the cold blood herself; that she should have let Mr. Bell alone to choose the plaintain for himself, and not have begun so soon after her husband's death; but he supposed she was so fond of white flesh, that she was afraid Jessy would snatch it from her, and therefore took care to bespeak him as soon as possible. As it was now settled, he wished to fasten the knot as tight as possible, and therefore proposed they should be re-married in their presence, if I had no objection. To this we all consented. And in addition to the ceremony, and to add to the merriment of the company, Bell took his wife by the hand, and in a moment very dexterously lifted her on his shoulder, then began dancing, and sung the following lines, parodied from an old Scots ballad:

"Fye let us a' to the bridal,

"For there will be lilting there,

"Now Bell's to be wedded to Eva,

"The lass with the coal-black hair."

After this he danced about as if he had no burthen on

his shoulders, and cut such capers as amazed us all, and much more the Indians. He was full six feet high, and his wife small and light in person, so that he made no more of her than a feather.

Now all faces wore cheerful aspects, and my friend Owagamy was the first to call for pipes, and we all sat down smoking together. To complete the entertainment of the company, Bell began to give them a sample of his Merry Andrew tricks. He desired a ring to be made, and opened the farce with a thousand monkey-antics, and mimicry of the drollest kind. He then said he would shew them a specimen of his slight-of-hand. For this purpose he stript himself, and taking a small stone, put it into his mouth, and in a short time drew it from under his arm, and so conveyed it from one part of his body to another, to the great amazement of the company. He then began to tumble, walk on his hands, and the like. As he was doing this, Eva ran and caught fast hold of him, dreading lest he should fall. This made Owagamy laugh, and say that she was afraid he would break in two pieces, he supposed, and there was no other white man likely to fall to her share. He pleased the Indians so much, I thought they would have eaten him up alive. They did every thing but worship him. They supposed I could do the like if I pleased; but I desired Harry to inform them of the contrary, which they wondered at. The sport was kept up all the day; and thus ended the wedding, to my great comfort. The next morning I thanked Bell for his affability, and for keeping up the good-humour of the company so long and so well. He said, he had been so many years out of practice, that he was quite stiff in his joints, and could scarcely walk.

The Indians now gave us a formal intimation that one of their company, called Looso-yamy, was brother to Eva. I asked why they had not informed us of this when they first came. Harry said it was because they thought there was a blackness over us. I bid him tell them, they should never find any blackness proceed from our side: the whole mistake had arisen from Eva's supposing it was my intention to send her away after her husband's death. It was so, he said, and all were now satisfied. Owagamy then told Harry they could stay no longer with us this time, as they had other affairs to transact when they returned. So they took an affectionate leave of us the next morning.

The day after they left us, Owen brought me the skin of a snake almost entire, as a curiosity. Harry told us, that when these reptiles want to discharge themselves of their old coat, they endeavour to find out some old knot-hole in a tree, or some such aperture; through these holes they pass, and by that means leave their old skin behind them; after which they are obliged to keep retired for some time, as their new skin is too tender for travelling. At the season of the year which is their breeding-time, I have seen multitudes of snakes near some run of water, in bunches or masses, twisted together in such strange combinations that it was wonderful to observe them. Thus entwined together, they tumble and roll about; and you may approach them as near as you please without fear of danger, as they cannot separate. I have seen at least a dozen in one bunch, and of different kinds.

CHAPTER XXIV.

FIFTEENTH YEAR OF MY RESIDENCE.

MY new friend had now resided about a year with me, and we were quite happy in each other's society. One day we took it into our heads to ramble into the woods with our guns. As we were passing along he took up a plant, and, shewing it to me, said it was a fine narcotic. He then pointed out several others, telling me the virtues of each. He said, that as Harry and he were one day at Tower's Field, he saw plenty of large reeds growing ; and that, with a little patience and contrivance, he thought he could form a sort of flute with them. I bid him take care that his love of music did not lead him into danger, as the place he mentioned was full of alligators.

"Never fear, my friend," said he, "we will find some way or other to get them ; 'tis but to make up a good fire, and the alligators will soon retire."

"Take care," I replied, "that you do not make such a bonfire as I did when first I landed here, which I verily believed would never be extinguished."

"Be not afraid," said he ; "leave that to Harry and me ; we will be cautious enough."

Soon after, they went to fetch some salt, and brought some of the canes home with them. Nothing went forward now but making of flutes. I contrived to make him an iron tool out of a spike-nail, to burn the holes ; but not knowing how to adapt the holes to the bore, the instrument when made was never true

in tune. Error at last gave experience, and experience brought the matter nearer to perfection. At length, therefore, a flute was produced tolerably good and true. Our wild forest now became acquainted with, and learnt to echo the charming melody of 'Tweedside,' 'Ettrick Banks,' 'Invermay,' and many other such popular airs; and many an hour has his pleasant pipe charmed away for me in this forlorn and desolate wilderness.

Harry became so enamoured with music that he was always piping. Norman seeing this, gave him instructions, and he came on very fast. The women caught the sounds, and learnt all the tunes they played. The Indian women have a charming natural sweetness of voice. The children took it from them, I joined in the chorus, and our retreat re-echoed with plaintive or joyful melodies.

Thus time went on till the middle of August, when, as we were one day out turtling, I discovered a vessel in the offing, standing away to the north-east. This sight made Bell thoughtful. After some time looking at the ship, he said, "Why could we not venture to sea in our long-boat, and by leaving this place stand some chance of revisiting our native country?"

"Where would you propose to go?" said I; "you could not think of keeping the seas long in an open boat?"

"Could we not keep the shore aboard always?" he replied.

"But where bound?" I said.

"Why, I think we might get to the coast of Carolina well enough in her."

"What, to round all the bays, points, and reefs, my friend! Only consider the vast Bay of Mexico and

others ; with many difficulties it is impossible to foresee or provide for."

" But suppose we could conquer these, we should soon horse through the Gulf of Florida."

" Don't reckon without your host. Let me hear, in the first place, how you would lay your plan for such a grand undertaking ; and if I cannot give better reasons for continuing where we are, I will join you in it."

" I would first raise the long-boat a strake higher," said he, " and make us a good snug cuddy forward, with lockers abaft ; then for sails, we have canvass enough, you know."

" Yes ; but provisions, how would you obtain a sufficient quantity of them ? Do you think such vegetables as we daily consume would last long ? And where could you stow a sufficient quantity of water, or find room for our family ?"

" As for the family," he said, " we need only take our wives and children, the rest might return to their own people again ; which I suppose they would prefer to going with us."

" Stop there, my friend," said I. " My family are all dear to me ; and wherever I go, they shall accompany me. I look upon Harry as a part of myself. Was not his sister my wife, by whom I have had two children ? Could I be guilty of such a piece of ingratitude to such an honest faithful creature, who would, at a word of mine, brave the whole ocean to bear me company throughout the universe ? Have you forgotten the lecture which the Indian, Gatta-loon, so lately delivered to us ? Shall we, like the vulture, produce the darkness of death ? and, as he observed to us, if the Great One had made our complexions whiter than

theirs, so should our actions be likewise. The voice in the wind should sound only of our friendship and benevolence to them. Independently of the cruelty of your proposal, the scheme itself is absolutely impracticable. Nothing but the miraculous interposition of Providence could save us from destruction, and we have no right to presume upon that interference. The desire to visit our native country is strong in every breast; the motive is honourable; let the means of obtaining it be equally so. If a favourable opportunity should occur, we may embrace it; but it must be such a one as will contribute, without exception, to the happiness of all. Till such shall arrive, let us make ourselves happy and contented where we are, and bless God for the comforts and conveniences he has been pleased to favour us with in this wilderness. I know not if the change of condition might be considered as a benefit. Here we lead a life of quiet enjoyment and peaceful innocence. In the world again, surrounded with temptations, we might become the victims of dissipation and extravagance, and lose that serenity of mind which, in our present state, gives a zest to our occupations as well as our amusements. I trust, my good friend, you will admit the objections I have stated to your scheme, and the grounds on which I form them, to deserve your very serious attention. In whatever light you may view them, you will at least do me the justice to believe that my motives are pure and disinterested, and that they are proofs of the sincerity of my friendship for you, as well as my anxious desire of promoting your happiness in every situation."

"Say no more, messmate," said he. "I am willing to conform in every thing to your will; and must con-

fess, from what you have now said, that I see things in a different light."

We now dropped the subject ; and having met with tolerable success in our turtling scheme, returned to our habitation.

It was now about the middle of October ; and about ten o'clock in the evening there came on such a terrible gale of wind, that before two hours it blew a hurricane, shifting all round the compass ; every small article was blown down ; and had we not been sheltered by a large grove of trees in front, forming as it were a wall, which protected us from its fury in that part, I know not what would have been the consequences. Yet, notwithstanding this screen, the wind would come with such an eddy and whirl round our place, that I ordered all our fire to be extinguished, fearing it might be blown among the thatch, and so burn down our kitchen again. About three o'clock in the morning Eva called me out of the cave to " come and see!"

" See what ?" said I.

" The great blaze in the clouds," she said.

When I got out, Bell called to me to know what I thought of it. I was quite at a loss to account for it.

" Let us endeavour to mount the hill," said he ; which we did, and were obliged to bawl as loud as possible, for the wind was yet so high, that we could scarcely keep our legs, or hear each other's voices. When we arrived at the top, we could plainly perceive a most dreadful fire at sea, at about three leagues distant. This could be nothing but a ship on fire. She continued to burn for more than two hours after we first discovered her ; how long before it was impossible for us to say. As the day came on we saw no more of

her. About noon it fell dead calm, and we began to gather up our things that were scattered abroad by the wind.

“ Well,” said I to Bell, “ have we not great reason to thank God for security and preservation during the last tempestuous night? What would those poor souls who were in the vessel have given to have been in equal safety?”

“ Alas!” he replied, “ fire or water has been their destruction before this time.”

“ That you may be assured of,” said I; “ no boat could live in such a sea. This is a severe lesson to us to be content with our situation. We might have been on the ocean in our poor open long-boat if I had given way to your scheme. What must then have been our condition? and how would our distress have been aggravated by the reflection that it was our own doing; that we had voluntarily left a secure and peaceful habitation to trust ourselves to the fury of the winds and waves? Let us, therefore, my fellow pilgrim, cease to repine at our condition, and resign ourselves entirely into the hands of him who is in all our paths; who hath delivered our souls from death, and our feet from falling, that we might walk before him in the light of the living.”

The next day we proposed to make an excursion along the shore, as probably some part of the wreck might be found, that would lead to a discovery as to what nation she belonged to, and where bound. We returned fatigued and disappointed without finding any thing: nor from that time did a single stick ever come on shore except a few half-burnt staves, which gave us no information.

About two days after this melancholy affair, whilst

Harry was at the old plantation, in the canoe, a poor dog came creeping to him, almost starved to death. He lifted him into the canoe, and brought him home ; the poor thing seemed quite exhausted, and could not stand. I ordered that all possible care should be taken of him, giving him but little food at a time. The dog was a black and white spaniel, of the largest breed, and though in such low condition, was very handsome, and probably once much valued by his owner. This poor beast had certainly belonged to the unfortunate ship that was burnt, but in what manner he came to land we could not imagine, unless the crew had happily made their escape, and had left this dog behind them on the shore ; but in this case they must have landed somewhere about the whale point, as we got no sight of them.

“ Perhaps they may be there yet,” said Bell.

“ God grant they may !” I replied, “ that we may give them assistance ; they must stand in great need of relief, as I know by my own experience.”

Bell expressed a great desire to go and search for them.

I said, “ by all means, let us save life, if possible.” I desired that Harry would act as pilot, as my friend Bell had never been there before. I likewise proposed that they should take the spaniel along with them, as he was now much recovered, and might probably greatly assist them in their search ; if any people were there the dog would soon find them out.

They set off early the next morning, and did not return till the evening of the next day. The first thing I saw was the spaniel, who came up to me with great joy ; I then ran down to the landing-place to welcome my companions, asking them what news ?

"None of any service," said Bell.

They came home with me, and gave an account of their expedition. They had examined the whole coast, even into "Boombay," as I called it. While they were on the beach, the dog put off, and ran away ahead to something they saw at a good distance; they followed him, and when they came up, found the corpse of a young man. They at first intended to bring it home in the boat's bottom, but finding it very offensive and putrid, they stripped the body, and buried it in the sand, bringing the clothes with them. They were certain, they said, the dog knew the deceased, as, when they were digging the grave, the creature sat, as it seemed very melancholy, looking on the whole time; but when they came to strip the body, and remove it to the place of its interment, the poor animal began to howl and whine sadly. When they had covered the grave up, he went and lay down on the spot, and staid there, looking after them as they walked away. Having walked about fifty yards, they called to him, and he came after them slowly, every now and then looking back, but at length followed them freely into the boat.

Mr. Bell described the corpse to be that of a young man about twenty, middle size, with sandy hair; his dress, a striped fine shirt, petticoat trowsers of good white linen, with a jacket of the same kind, to which his hat was fastened by a laniard. He had a pair of white fustain breeches under his trowsers, and in the left pocket he found a clasp knife, and a small bunch of twine; in the other a note, from which we learned his name to have been Richard Green; and in one of his trowser pockets was a song in manuscript, beginning thus: "Early one morn, a jolly brisk tar," &c.

From these circumstances we had no doubt but they were English, or at least that this unfortunate youth was our countryman. We took some pains to find out the dog's name, and at last determined it to be Rover, as he answered to it better than any other, by coming whenever he was called by it. In about a month's time he had completely recovered his flesh, and began to look very handsome. I believe nothing but absolute necessity reconciled him to a fish diet.

Some time after this, my son Owen shot a snake of the barber's pole sort, and came in a great hurry to tell me he had killed a snake with two heads. I laughed at him, and said it could not be.

"Hoot, hoot, mon," said Bell, who was standing by, "the boy is winnel-skewed, as I thought myself when you showed me a' that gear yonder in the neuk."

"Pray, Bell," said I, "explain to me that word, if you please?"

"Why, it is a saying among our people in Scotland, whenever they mistake one object for two, that the moon is in the hallior or clouded, and at such times they are winnel-skewed, or their eyes deceive them."

Upon this Harry went with Owen, and they brought it up to us on a stick, when to our very great surprise we found the creature really as he had described it. This snake was not above two inches round, and in length about four feet. About five inches from the natural extremity of a single head, began two necks to branch out, terminating with two fair and perfect heads completely formed, both capable, as it appeared, of performing all their necessary functions. Of this we thought ourselves sufficient judges, as the creature was not yet dead, and opened each mouth, and played with both tongues alike. We were so struck with this won-

derful phenomenon, that I made Harry skin and stuff it with the greatest care, and we have it now by us. I asked Harry if he had ever heard of such a thing before? He said never. If it had not been submitted to the evidence of my own senses, I should have suspected some deception.

It was now by our account the 23d of December. I told Mr. Bell that my mother always made it a rule to have a goose at Christmas, and that we would endeavour to have something like it, if possible.

“At what market will you buy it?” said he.

“We will try for a substitute. You and Harry shall go to the Bird Key with your guns, and there you will find game enough.”

So away they went the next day, and brought home three boobies, and five red-shanks.

“Now,” said I, “if we can but catch a couple of fine red-snappers, I think we shall be well provided with a Christmas dinner.”

We therefore took our lines, and went down the lagoon, but had not the success I hoped for. As we returned, Harry killed a large barrowcooter. I told him those fish are sometimes poisonous, and asked if he knew how to prove them? He said, no.

“Well, then,” I replied, “when they go to cook it, boil it alone, with a clean piece of silver. If the silver does not turn black the fish is good, and may be eaten without danger.” We tried the experiment, and the fish proved excellent.

Soon after this, poor Godart Somer's orphan daughter, Hannah, died of a fever. Bell tried all his skill to save her, but in vain. We therefore laid her by the side of those who had before departed from our little society.

About a month after Christmas, Bell almost lost the

use of one of his hands. He had been out alone to fish, in the Indian canoe; among other fish he had taken, was one called the doctor fish, by which he was wounded. This fish has a sharp bone on each side of its tail. The bone is not perceptible to a person unacquainted with the fish, as it has the power to lay it close to its side, or erect it at pleasure. It is so keen, that no lancet can be more so, which instrument it much resembles in form. The whole fish is of a purple brown, and about the size of a middling haddock. He brought home at the same time two others of a peculiar kind and form. The first is called by our seamen a parrot-fish,* and with great propriety I think, as the whole fish is green, except the fins, which are red. It has very large scales, but its bill or mouth is not formed after the manner of other fish, having a pair of bones resembling the beak of a parrot, with which it mashes or cracks small shell-fish. The whole roof of the mouth is also one hard bony substance. The other sort is very similar to the above, except in the colour; instead of green it is a perfect blue, and is called in Providence, the gillambour, the derivation or meaning of which I know not.

Bell's hand remained in a very bad state for more than a fortnight, and at times gave him great pain. Having tried a variety of experiments himself, he at last put himself under my wife's care. She proved the

* Two curious fishes are exhibited on the Steyne, which were caught in the night by the fishermen; who, on drawing their nets, brought up a round old wicker basket, containing those two curious fishes, being about the weight of four pounds each, and nearly the shape of a cod fish, and of a white shiny scale, with the mouth like a parrot's bill; a very small round head, nearly made like a parrot's head, with a stumpy tail.—*Brighton, August 18, 1807.*

more successful doctor of the two, and completed the cure in about five days, by applying the juice of certain herbs to it. When it was well, I joked him about the doctor fish, telling him that two of a trade seldom agreed. "I shall take care for the future," said he, "when one of them happens to pop his nose into my shop, to let him know that I will be the master."

A day or two after, Harry brought in from his traps a very curious little animal, such as I had not seen before. Bell, however, knew it at once, and called it an armadillo, saying, there were many of them away to the southward. It was of a light ash colour, and about the size of a young sucking pig, and somewhat resembled one, only it was of a slighter make, and the tail much longer; but what is most remarkable, it appeared to be covered with an armour of shells. I asked Harry if his people ever eat them? He said, yes. "Cook it then," said I, "and let us taste it." Bell said no chicken could be more delicate; and so indeed we found it.

I now proposed to Bell that we should turn up our yawl and large canoe, in order to examine and give them a thorough repair. This we went about, and I found my poor old canoe like a honeycomb. Upon this I set Owen to peg-making. We secured her bottom as well as we could; but she was become old and worn. As for the yawl she was likewise full of the worm; but yet in a much stronger state than my poor old ark of preservation. I found by mixing a good quantity of sand with our pitch and tar, it became more serviceable to us, in paying and preserving our boats.

After we had completely fitted up our two boats, and mended their sails, made a pair of new oars, and some thowls, I proposed a day of recreation for our

whole family. When the day came, we all mustered, having provided what was necessary, and put away down the lagoon ; myself, my wife, and three children, with Harry, in the yawl ; Bell, his wife, Patty, and Jessy, in the great canoe ; Owen, Job, and Luta, in the Indian canoe. Owen was boatman, as he could paddle very well, being now near ten years of age. However, when the wind sprung up, I took them in tow, and thus we arrived safe at the old plantation, where we landed, and left the females and children, with Harry to guard them. Bell and I, with little Owen, went out into deep water, in order to catch a few groupar and the like, in our yawl. We laid her to, in about twelve fathom water, and let her drive over the patches of the rocks, as you can see the bottom distinctly at that depth in this part of the world. We had not been long on the ground before we had fine sport. We hauled in, and baited as fast we could ; but it happened while I was engaged with a large groupar a shark came up in full chace after it. I pulled as eagerly as possible, yet he got hold of it before I could bring it to the water's edge, and left me no more than its head to my hook. While we were contending which should have the fish, another shark, being likewise in chace of it, by some mistake, in the struggle bit his antagonist. Seeing the eagerness of this fish, I bid Bell hold on, and play him well, in order to tire him ; but he, not being so much used to this kind of sport as Harry and I were, through too great hurry fell down backwards in the boat, crying, " Hoot, hoot, mon, what sort of muckle horned de'il is dealing with us now ? " Owen burst into violent laughter, I took the line ; we soon tired the fish, and brought him alongside, and I gave him his quietus with an axe, which I brought with me

for the purpose, if necessary. It proved to be the very shark which had snapped away my fish from the hook. The other had bit him into the bone, through a part full seven inches thick. In about an hour we took as much fish as we wanted. If we had had the inclination we might have filled our boat. I gave the line into Owen's hand. He expected to perform great feats with it, but he shortly called out lustily for my assistance. I took him round the waist, and bade him pull with all his might; but he soon resigned the line to me, or he would have been overboard inevitably. I hauled in the fish; and we then stood in for the old place, where we had left our little family. We found a good fire, and every other necessary preparation for cooking, as my wife said she could plainly perceive by the help of the glass, that we had good sport.

We had not been long landed before we heard Jessy cry out lustily. I sent Harry to know what was the cause. He soon came back, and snatching up his hatchet flew off like a dart, and we after him. We now discovered Jessy standing with a load of dry wood on her head, and Harry chopping at a large black snake, which lay right in the narrow path; it was at least six feet long, but not in the least venomous, as we well knew. Harry having killed, brought it to the fire to roast. Having cooked it to his liking, he offered us a part; but we declined it—our stomachs were set to better fare.

“What the de'il are ye about?” said Bell. “These Indians wad devour the auld whaap-neb himsel 'gin he were weel cooked, and sup the broth after.”

“Why, Norman,” I replied, “you don't know that I have eaten of them before now, and really they have no bad flavour.”

"Weel, then, ye had better, the next ye find, get one of their muckle tree paddocks for sauce to it," said he.

In the evening we all embarked, and got safe home to our dwelling. Our stock of liquor was now got so low that we seldom touched it except in cases of necessity. We now began to repair the damages in our thatch, which had happened during the late tempest; and this took us up some time. Our plantain trees suffered also. Thus matters went on smoothly, without any variation of circumstances, to the expiration of another year.

CHAPTER XXV.

SIXTEENTH YEAR OF MY RESIDENCE.

It happened one day as Harry and Owen returned from fishing, they brought to me a curious bunch or whisp of some living substance, resembling catgut, and of the same pale yellow colour. It was so interwoven, that we could not by any means separate it; neither could we discover either end so as to find head or tail, yet it kept in continual motion, and might be, as we judged, twelve fathoms in length. I had seen one of them before, which I found in the stomach of a groupar; but whether bred in the maw of the fish, or taken in as food, I know not. This which I am now describing came up with the hook.

This singular insect leads me to the description of another which I found one day in the woods, about

four years ago. It was lying on the ground, and of a very peculiar shape. It was a hard substance, black as jet, and in form like our barbers' curling pipes, and about the same length and magnitude. It seemed composed of a range of scales, and at each end had a small aperture. When on the ground it could advance slowly with either end foremost with ease. I could neither discover eyes, mouth, or any detached member.

In the course of my residence in this place I have seen many very curious and extraordinary things. Some of them have escaped my memory, as I had, during my first years, no means of recording them, and little expected ever to become master of the materials for that purpose. Having naturally an inquisitive mind, I took much delight in prying into the works and wonders of nature; and, I protest, in gratifying this disposition, I have seen such extraordinary things, that I have been almost afraid to mention them, lest my veracity might be doubted. Whoever shall travel much abroad, with his attention at all awake to such inquiries, will feel a similar embarrassment from the same cause.

I declare that I have advanced nothing in this book that did not immediately pass under my own eyes; and what interest could such a poor forlorn creature as myself have for imposing falsehoods upon the world, uncertain as I am, whether what I now write may ever fall under the inspection of any civilized being of any nation? I was bred a sailor; (I write for the information of my brother tars;) with nothing more than a common education, and plain sense. I do not address myself to the learned; I have no pretensions to their favour, and am perhaps beneath their censure. I make this digression

concerning my work, because many things which I have seen and described in it may not have been noticed by others. The reason of which is obvious; travellers are perpetually moving from one place to another, and have scarcely time to note down all they see, and many of them are without the inclination minutely to examine into the wonderful works of nature, the various beauties of creation: whereas my life has been such, confined to these remote regions, that, with even common observation, I must have been deficient both in understanding and curiosity not to have noticed and recorded, (when in my power so to do,) the many extraordinary things which have been submitted to my observation. I have considered myself as separated from mankind, and set apart as it were for the very purpose, with time to pursue the enquiry, and particularly favoured by Providence with the means of recording what I should discover.

It happened one evening as Bell was reading over to me some Scots songs, and explaining the words I did not understand, all at once the earth began to lift us up and down, twice. We stared rather wildly at each other. Bell threw down the book and said it was an earthquake. We had soon after another shock, but much weaker. I had never felt any thing similar before. Bell said he had, since he had been in this country; and had been shown large hills and cliffs by the Indians which had been split from clew to earing by them, as the sailors term it; but we were in no danger, he said, as there was no volcano in our neighbourhood. As the Indians paid but little attention to such a circumstance, the impression soon wore off; and we considered it as an indication of great heat, which was really the case soon after.

The butterflies now became very numerous ; much more so than I had at any former time observed during my residence here. It may not be amiss in this place to say something concerning them. They differ very much from what I have seen in Europe ; are more wild and swift in flight, as they are frequently seen over the tops of the loftiest trees in the woods. To describe them would be endless and almost impossible, there are so many different sorts. I have seen many full as broad as the palm of my hand, and some much larger ; and have found pods of the silk-worm sticking in crevices of the rocks and clefts of trees. But there is one sort we sometimes found fixed to the limb of a small twig, five times the size of the ordinary sort, and of a dark-brown colour resembling oakum. These pods are so strong, that it is hard to rend them asunder. The fly which they produce is as broad as a man's hand, and of a beautiful variety of colours, grey, red, and white, with a pair of fine yellow feathers in front of its head. There is another sort of a brimstone colour, with a circle in each wing, which is as transparent as glass, with the after part of their wings tapering away like a swallow's tail. We sometimes met with a sort which were yellow, with bars running athwart, in a very regular manner, of black ; another kind green, with black bars, transverse to the other sort.

I must here mention a very extraordinary circumstance, and for which I could never account. We have observed a kind of brown wasp, which, falling head foremost from the trees to the ground, there seems to take root ; for a small plant springs up through its body. Bell's opinion was, that it proceeded from some kind of seed they swallow, which intoxicates

them; so that when the wasp falls to the earth these seeds take root, and immediately begin to vegetate.

We were now visited by a single canoe with some of our friends. In it came Soro-teet, or the crab-catcher; Yewarra-baso, and Kayuaga. The two last had never been at our habitation before. These Indians came out of curiosity to see us, and brought with them two couple of young fowls as breeders; adding that they were a present from Owagamy, with his heart, as they termed it, and that he had them sent to him from over the great hills. Their rarity added value to the present. Among other things, they informed us they had another of those people called moonlights born, a female; but that she soon died, which all were very glad of. This intelligence induced me to make some further inquiry concerning these extraordinary beings, but I could obtain no further satisfaction. In about three days they left us. When Soro-teet was on board the canoe, he reminded Harry of a flute he had promised to make for him; this I gave him my word should be done.

Some days after the Indians were gone, we heard a great noise among the fowls. Eva sent Job to see what was the cause of it. He soon came running out, and said Jacko had got one of the new birds in his arms, and was pulling out his feathers. I ran off immediately in a great passion, and found the monkey with the fowl in his lap, picking out its feathers one by one. He directly held out the fowl to me. I took it in one hand, and him by the head with the other, and brought them out. The fowl was not much injured; and to prevent his doing it again, I ordered Jacko to be tied up, and gave him a slight flagellation; at the same time Job and Owen held the fowl's

feathers to his nose. After this discipline we dismissed him ; but he grew very shy from that time, and whenever one of the fowls happened to come near him he was off in an instant ; but when one of the young cocks began to crow, the monkey would rave and chatter, and run into the first corner he could find, and there clap his hands before his face. This caused much diversion to our young ones ; but he never touched any of the fowls after. Among the multitude of his tricks, one deserves to be recorded. One day I observed him very busy among the graves, and sent little Luta to see what he was at. The child came back and said Jacko had got a heap of round things in a hole. On this I went down myself, and found the hole sure enough, and that he had deposited in it more than fifty dollars. It is true they were of little service to us just then, but the time might come when we might have occasion to use them. I therefore called Bell, who was down at the boat. When he came I shewed it to him, and said that Jacko had found a treasure likewise.

“ Ay,” said he, “ and yours is, I dare say, grown less.”

How the monkey made the discovery, I know not ; but he must have seen us at work there, as he had been at the labour of removing many stones before he could get at it. To prevent this in future, Bell and Harry removed the whole during the night, and no one knew where it was except them and myself.

CHAPTER XXVI.

ABOUT the middle of August we had a most tremendous storm of thunder and lightning, with violent rain, but scarcely any wind. The large tree on which the vultures lodged at my friend Somer's death was split from top to bottom. I kept all the family within the cave during the time it lasted, which was about three quarters of an hour ; all then becoming calm, we ventured out.

“ Well,” said I, “ thank Heaven, we are all safe ! ”

Shortly after my little Rees came and told his mother that one of our Indian dogs was so fast asleep that he could not get him to move. When Jessy went to see it, she found the dog quite dead ; it doubtless was killed by the lightning, as we could perceive no external mark of violence.

Not long after this, we had a most dismal accident indeed; attended with fatal consequences to us all. While we were out turtling in the bay, the cursed monkey overset a yabba as it was boiling on the fire, by which my son Owen had one of his feet scalded. This accident so greatly alarmed them all, as they knew how much I loved the boy, that my wife sent Eva off immediately into the wood after certain roots, with which she was to make a poultice to draw out the burn. The poor creature ran off with affectionate haste, although she was then big with child. About four o'clock in the evening we returned from fishing, and found the boy with his foot bound up, and were informed of the whole story. My wife said

Eva had been gone a great while after roots and herbs, and wondered much that she was not returned. Sentence of death was at once passed on the monkey ; but the creature had been so diverting, and seemed so truly sorrowful for what had happened, that I could not find in my heart to carry it into execution ; but resolved to confine him within certain limits by means of a rope, to be lengthened at pleasure. This was accordingly done, to prevent further mischief.

As the evening advanced, Bell grew very uneasy about his wife. He was fearful she had rambled beyond her knowledge, and had lost herself.

“ How can that be ? ” said I ; “ she has been all over the wood several times ; but at all events you and Harry had better go off in search of her, with one of the shells.”

They set forward immediately, and did not return till the sun was quite down, but without any tidings. I began now to be very much alarmed, and advised that they should get torches without loss of time, arm themselves, and set off again, as we had every thing to fear from her remaining alone in the forest after night. There could be little doubt but she would be devoured by wild beasts before the morning. Away they went, and we heard them almost the whole time shouting and hallooing. I ordered Patty to make up as large a fire as she could, as a direction for them to find their way back. Every now and then I blew a conch ; and thus, with great anxiety, time passed on till midnight. Now all were in tears about me ; and if I did not hear them every now and then, my soul was filled with horror lest they should be all lost. At length about two o'clock they came in. Bell was almost frantic with distress. No Eva could they see or hear of.

I now began to be extremely affected for the loss of the poor woman, and the situation of my friend. I endeavoured to put the most favourable circumstances together, and used all my skill to keep up his spirits, yet I was strongly impressed with the notion that we should never see her more. Thus passed the time till the dawn, and then I proposed to go in search for her myself. I took Harry with me, and left Bell with the women, in the deepest affliction. We scoured the woods in the strictest manner till noon, but were obliged to return without having made any discovery. I now began to reflect on myself for my neglect in leaving the women by themselves. Had any one remained at home with them, in all probability this accident might not have happened; but, at all events, the dreadful consequences would have been prevented. But the fact was, that the complete security I had so long enjoyed had inspired me with a confidence bordering on rashness. Bell observing my deep affliction, and that I continued to accuse myself of negligence, desired me, with tears in his eyes, not to consider myself in any respect culpable; even if I had been at home, it was by no means improbable that the same accident might have happened. I told him, the impression on my mind was such, that from this time nothing should make me so far forget my duty to my family as to leave them without a protector,—no, not for an hour.

“ My good brother,” said Harry, endeavouring to soften the anxiety of my mind, “ perhaps she is gone home to see her brother.”

“ Nonsense,” I replied: “ could she think of going so far without victuals, and alone? Impossible.”

“ You don’t know what the Indians can do, when the great ugly spirit is on them,” he said.

Bell replied, "Though it is almost madness to entertain such an opinion, yet since Harry has started it, I am willing to flatter myself with the hope that it may be so."

Three days passed away thus, in hope, in doubt, in fear. Harry now proposed to Bell to go overland with him to their people. I very much approved of this plan, as there was no knowing how the Indians might take this intelligence, if not informed of it by us. Bell agreed ; and having armed themselves, they set off the next day, with some provision, and the dog Swift with them. I charged Bell to have his eyes about him, and strictly to follow Harry's advice, as he knew the country well ; and if they found her there, to bring her back by water ; but if the journey proved fruitless, to return as they went, by land ; as by such conduct we should be better prepared on their arrival. I said I would give them a fortnight ; but if they did not return in that time, I should be wretched indeed.

When they were gone, I began to form many conjectures to myself respecting the poor woman. Perhaps some strange Indians had met and taken her off with them, or she might be drowned by accident ; or having wandered beyond her knowledge, had been starved to death, or, what was more likely, devoured by wild beasts ; in which opinion the women all joined. Thus we remained betwixt hope and fear, day after day. I never once left home further than to go down to the lagoon to catch a few fish for our daily subsistence, and that but seldom, as we lived chiefly on vegetable diet. In about a week after this, about nine o'clock at night, Owen cried out that he heard somebody halloo. We all ran out to listen, but could hear nothing. A short time after, he said he was sure he heard it again. We

looked at each other in fearful anxiety. The solemn silence we observed increased our agitation. We were afraid to speak, and the silence became tremendous. We had no particular object of fear, yet all our senses seemed awake to the most dreadful apprehensions. We were soon undeceived, and the charm was broken, by hearing one of those nocturnal birds, which on my first landing had so terrified me. We now returned to our cave with heavy hearts; and our anxiety continued to increase till the whole time allotted for their absence was elapsed, and yet no sign of their return.

About five days after this, Swift came running into the cave.

“Here they are!” I cried in a transport.

On going out, I perceived Harry and another Indian coming down the hill. My mind now misgave me at once, and I earnestly called out, “Where is Bell?”

When they came in, Harry said they had left him behind, being sick. Eva cannot be there, thought I. Harry said, Eva never went there.

“What is the matter with my friend?” said I. “Tell me at once; my mind is tortured by doubt and apprehension.”

“He will return in a few days with some of our friends,” he replied.

I desired my wife to sound Gaynosanto, the other Indian; and she told me, that after Bell and Harry arrived there the Indians held a private council. When they had done this, they told Harry they concluded Eva was either taken off by some strange Indians, or devoured by the tigers; saying they knew me to be such a true friend that I would not consent to the spilling of any blood; for, with all their industry

and vigilance, they could never bring such a charge against their white brother, united to them in flesh and blood.

"What," said I to her, "have they employed spies to watch our conduct? Tell me, I charge you."

She then frankly owned that some of their people had been deputed on such an errand, and had actually been at times so near our habitation as to have a fair view of our domestic society and behaviour. I was at first very much hurt at this; but considering that they came only to observe in what manner we treated their women, it struck me the motive was fair and honourable, though the practice betrayed a want of confidence; yet even for this jealousy a ready excuse might be found. Perhaps their own experience of the conduct of Europeans on many occasions had given them no very favourable opinion of their honour and honesty, and excited a diffidence, which their own simplicity of manners would otherwise have revolted at. On this consideration I could not but commend them. The friendship between us was cemented by the mutual exchange of good offices, and their knowledge of our sincerity and fair conduct.

All this time Harry seemed to be much on the reserve. I asked him the reason, and why he did not give me a full account of all that had happened during their absence? He said Owagamy had desired him to keep his mouth shut, as he himself would tell every thing when he came with Bell, and then Gaynosanto was to go back with him.

"Why should they give me so much uneasiness?" said I. "If Eva be there, let her return with her husband."

Harry said, "No, no ; she has been eaten by the tigers long ago, or starved to death."

"If so," said I, "why did he not return with you?"

He said, "Owagamy sent me off with that man, thinking that you would grieve at not having any tidings ; but they will come soon, and then you will know all."

Well, thought I, if he has taken a fancy to reside with them, in God's name so let it be ; I must reconcile myself to my first manner of life as well as I can.

More than a fortnight elapsed, and yet no news of Bell. It then came into my head that the Spaniards had got some knowledge of him, and that the Indians had given him up. Yet this thought was doing injustice to my friends, who had ever behaved with the strictest honour and fidelity. About two days after, as Harry was coming out of the bushes, he spied three canoes coming into the bay. I immediately ordered our colours to be hoisted. We then got our boat ready, and went down to welcome them as usual, as since Bell had left me I did not know how matters might be changed. Gaynosanto and I were alone in the boat. I had ordered Harry to stay and guard the women. We met them at the mouth of the lagoon, and observed they had women with them. I now began to think they intended to surprise me with a sight of Eva again. After giving them a salute, we put away in before them. When we landed, Owagamy and Bell jumped on shore and came to us with a friendly salutation, which gave me great pleasure. I saw two women in the canoe, but they were strangers to me. When they came out, I led them up to the cave. I then began to inquire of Bell who the ladies were that had honoured me with a visit, as my wife did not know

them. He took one of them by the hand, and presented her to me as his wife.

"Hey day!" said I; "if this be the case, much joy to you."

He thanked me, and said the whole business had been conducted by my friend Owagamy and his council; and that he had submitted, not from choice, but under the impression that if he declined the proposal it might prove a subject of discontent, and involve us in much trouble.

"You were very prudent, messmate," said I; "and I am heartily glad that matters have come to so pleasing a conclusion."

I now gave orders that things should be provided, in order to shew them every civility possible. They were all in high spirits. Owagamy informed me that the bride was a widow of about twenty-five years of age, named Aanora, or a thing desired. Bell satisfied me the next day as to his remaining so long among them. The account he gave was as follows: "Having informed the Indians of the motive of our visit, they called a council, and took me to it. It was held in a large wig-wam. When they were assembled together, I was placed by the side of Owagamy. There was a profound silence for near half an hour, during which time twelve of them were smoking. At last an Indian got up and spoke to me in Spanish, saying that his people desired him (Gatta-loon) to be the one mouth or voice, through which I was to hear the sentiments of all. They knew, he said, that I was a true man—they saw my heart through my eyes; they were informed that I had lost my wife some days before I came to visit them; they were satisfied with my coming to them on this account; they should otherwise have

entertained a different opinion of me. They knew the misfortune which had happened to me was not of my own seeking, but an accident for which I was no way accountable ; and finding that I grieved so much for the loss, they were determined to keep me among them till they could find a plant proper for my cure. It had cost them some trouble to procure this remedy ; but they had at length succeeded. It was a little drooping for want of nourishment, as it had been a dry time lately where it grew. An odd kind of noise was now heard, and three women appeared at the door. One of them was desired to come forward ; Owagamy rising, took her by the hand and said, This is a woman, not of our nation, but our friend ; she has lost her nourisher, and by her own consent we give her to thee. Cherish her in thy heart as thou didst our sister Mattanany, now no more. Thou shouldst not be without a wife, since thou knowest so well how to nourish and protect one. We have sent our valuable brother Gaynosanto, with Ayasharry, lest our great-hearted white brother Penoly should want assistance in the mean time. We will return with Aanora and thee to thy friend as soon as convenient."

When Bell had finished, I desired Harry to return them our most hearty thanks for the many testimonies of their love and friendship, and particularly for their great attention and kindness in soothing and comforting my friend after his melancholy loss, and providing him with so effectual and pleasant a remedy ; which I was sure, from the goodness of his heart and his sincere attachment to them, he would value as he ought. Harry informed them, by my desire, that I had no liquor to treat them with ; my stock was quite exhausted. Owagamy said that all things decayed in

time except the sun, moon, and stars,—no wonder therefore that our liquor was out; they were always satisfied with the affectionate welcome they met with at our habitation. They staid with us five days, and then took their leave. Before they went I distributed some pieces of blue cloth among them; which, on examination, I was sorry to find were much injured by the moths.

When I was about to take my leave of Owagamy at the boat, and expressed my satisfaction at the friendly intercourse which had taken place with their people, and the regard I entertained for them, he smiled, and told Harry, there was but one thing I had omitted to convince them of my good faith and confidence in them. I begged to know what that was, as I was not conscious of the slightest want of attention.

He said, "You have many times looked towards the place where we reside, but in all the time you have remained here you have never willingly put one foot before the other to visit me and my people; it is true you did not know the path through the wood, but Ayasharry can lead you by the hand, whenever your mind is willing."

I told him the sole reason of my never having performed that duty, was the great charge I had on me to preserve my family, who were of his kindred and nation; but that he might acquaint his people, at his return, that I was now firmly resolved to pay them a visit the first fair opportunity. Upon this they all shouted. We went down the lagoon to see them off.

Harry and I could now make ourselves tolerably understood in Spanish, and we took every occasion of practising with Bell, who was kind enough to instruct us: indeed, for my own part, I had a smattering of

the language before, which I had learned when at the Havannah. I told Bell, if by any accident I should be discovered I was resolved to pass for a Spaniard ; that he should mark a cross on one of my hands, shave my beard, and plait my hair behind, after the Spanish manner.

He laughed at me, and said, "it would not do ; my tongue would soon betray me."

"Leave that to me," said I, "I have formed my plan better than you imagine ; as you shall hear. I shall call myself a native of Barcelona ; that I went into the service of an English gentleman at Venice when a boy, and remained with him and others after I came to England for many years, by which means I lost my mother tongue in a great degree."

"Troth," said he, "that will do, mon, if you can but support your part weel throughout ; but your name, how will that answer ?"

"In that you must assist me," said I ; "but let it be as near my own as possible."

All this being determined upon, he first took off my beard, and then plaited my hair. My wife and the other females were exceedingly diverted at my transformation. She said that I was gone back many moons, and had brought back a little young head with me. Bell then put one of the old sombreros on my head, and making me a low bow, welcomed me to his habitation, by the name of Signor Louis Penalosa. While these operations were performed Harry and Owen were absent. When I saw them coming I put on a very grave look, and we all kept our countenances extremely well. Fully to describe their behaviour on this occasion is impossible. When Harry first disco-

vered me sitting, so altered in appearance, he fixed his eyes on Bell, and looked quite foolish and confounded ; but on hearing me speak, poor Owen burst into a flood of tears. I called him to me, but he ran to hide behind Patty, held fast by her, and cried quite aloud. Upon this Bell endeavoured to bring him to me, but he resisted with all his strength, saying it was not his father he was sure. At last I called to Harry to come and shake hands with me.

“ O !” said he, “ I know it is you a little ; not you sideway ; one way your face so sharp ; look like young calabash now.”

“ Thank you for your comparison, Harry.”

He added, “ You look like young Spaniard now ; why you do so ? You no love Spaniard ?”

“ I do it to cheat them,” said I.

“ You no cheat our people ; they smell difference soon enough.”

Owen now began to be somewhat more composed, and smiled a little. He asked Bell what he cut his father for. My wife was much pleased with the alteration, and said every now and then, how pretty my new head looked, only she thought it quite too small. I told her it would soon grow larger, and in a few days the singularity of my appearance wore off.

I now desired Bell to mark my hand ; which he did with two small needles tied together, and filled the puncture with wet powder. It cost me much pain and patience before he had done. He had a similar crucifix on his own arm. To complete the deception, I proposed to make some smaller crosses to wear occasionally on our breasts. Bell, who was very ingenious, began immediately to work upon a dollar, out of which he

cast two or three small ones, which exactly suited our purpose. This being done, the metamorphosis was complete, and I became a Spaniard.

I now told Bell that it would be necessary to give his lady another name, as such was our custom.

"Troth gi'e her the name you like best," said he.

No, I told him the choice was with him solely.

"Well then," he replied, "we will call her Janet, if ye like;" and Janet was her name accordingly. My wife conveyed to her this intelligence, and she seemed mightily pleased with her new title.

About the latter end of March, as Bell and I were fishing in deep water, a prodigious large shark came ranging close in view. Bell said it was different from any he had seen before. We immediately baited the shark-hook with the bowels of a fish, and threw it right before his nose. He flew like a dart from it at first, but returned immediately, and took it in voraciously. As we knew we had him fast, we gave him time, and he afforded us very capital sport. He plunged below with great strength and velocity to a great depth; but as we humoured him he soon grew tired, and let us haul him in sight. We now got a fine view of him. To our very great surprise we found the fish had a piece of three-inch rope in a knot just above his tail, and that it had been on him for a great length of time. The fag ends were about a foot long, and had, as we thought, been longer; it was become white as flax. This fish was about sixteen feet in length, and the largest we had seen. It had many rows of teeth, and had doubtless been an old cruiser. Perhaps he had followed some ship from the coast of Africa to feed on the dead slaves, and had been taken and let go again, or made his escape. He

was the true tiger shark, of a blue colour, with the tips and fins of his tail and fins yellow. We made several quarts of oil from his liver, which was of great service to us.

Speaking of fish, I must remark, that at times we found an odd animal running over the bottom in shoal places. It was of a triangular form, about the size of a large flounder, and carried its head erect as a hen does, with bright eyes, the back mottled in a curious manner. It has four feet or fins shaped like the back fin of a turtle, the tail resembling a fan, which, with the fins or rather fin-feet, were edged with yellow. This creature can run along the bottom nimbly, and in deep water swims with ease. We never ventured to taste it, as we were fearful of the consequences.

We also found a sort of insect, or rather reptile, creeping in the shallow water, of a dark olive green, full of black circles. This creature advances in the manner our slugs do, dilating and contracting; but the most curious part of the story is, that on being once touched, it instantly emits a most glorious purple liquid all round it to the distance of a yard or more, so that the animal is no longer perceptible.

About the beginning of May, my wife desired Harry to get her some sappadillos the next time he went into the woods. He promised he would. Soon after, Harry told me in private that he knew what had become of poor Eva.

"Indeed!" said I, much surprised. "How came you not to tell me of it sooner?"

"Because I thought it would be a pity to let Bell know it, as it might make him miserable."

"Well, and when did you make the discovery?"

"When I went last into the woods for the sappa-

dillos. Come with me, and I will convince you of the truth."

I immediately accompanied him up the hill, where, in a hole under some bushes, he shewed me the remains of the cloth she used to wear round her waist. My blood ran cold at the sight. I desired him to acquaint me where and how he found this. He said, as he was on his ramble about two miles off, he came to a thicket, where he first found a rib bone, and looking about further he discovered the skull and other bones, with these rags, and knowing them directly, he said his great spirit came to him so strong, that if five tigers had been present he would have engaged them all.

"Well," said I, "keep it a secret till I see a proper time to disclose it hereafter. On my return home I informed my wife of the whole, with a strict injunction not to speak of it without my permission; for that my reason for telling her was, as a caution to prevent her going out at any time without a guard, and not to permit any of the women or children to wander out alone. It was not very long before a favourable opportunity occurred of informing Bell of this melancholy catastrophe of his poor wife Eva. He was greatly affected at the intelligence, as he expressed a sincere regard for her many virtues. He lamented her like a man who was not ashamed of his sorrow, but did not wish to obtrude it upon others to damp their enjoyments. It made a lasting impression upon his mind, though he exercised a manly fortitude, in submitting to the will of the Almighty. Nothing particular happened till I had finished my sixteenth year.

CHAPTER XXVII.

SEVENTEENTH YEAR OF MY RESIDENCE.

I now commenced a new year, which was marked by a visit from Gatta-loon, with seven other Indians, all of them our old acquaintance. When we went to salute them, they all appeared very sad. They seated themselves and continued silent for a considerable time. At length Gatta-loon got up, and in a mournful strain made a long oration in Spanish to Bell, which I soon found was to convey the melancholy intelligence of Owagamy's death. When he had finished, seeing me very dejected, he took me by the hand and said, "I am Owagamy now, and will love my friends and stand by them as long as they and I live. Your friends shall be my friends; and whoever would injure you shall feel the weight of my resentment." This was likewise said in Spanish, and we were all much pleased with the friendly assurance. We now informed them of poor Eva's fate, which they did not seem at all surprised at. They were before in a melancholy mood, and this did not enliven them. They staid with us but two days. Owagamy, they said, had charged them to be friends with us, and so they were determined to be. They were glad I had hit upon the expedient of passing for a Spaniard, of which Harry had acquainted them. They said it would take a great stone off their heads, which they had carried on my account a long time, but that they had borne the weight of it willingly.

Owagamy had ever been a steadfast friend from our first acquaintance. He was a man of great penetration and forecast, much beyond what might be expected from an uncultivated Indian. The news of his death truly affected me. We had ever considered him as our best bower-anchor whenever storms arose ; and he, and our good friend Komaloot, were ever ready to stand our pilots and to conduct us safely into harbour secure from wind and weather. Remembering all their good and generous offices in the course of our acquaintance, I desired Gatta-loon to signify on his return our unfeigned sorrow and condolence to all friends ; which he faithfully promised to do. We then parted mournfully, but affectionately.

One evening as I was reading, Owen came to me and said Mr. Bell desired I would come out and see the great rainbow.

“A rainbow at night, boy ?” said I ; it being then near ten o'clock : but as I knew something uncommon was to be seen, I went out ; and in the north-east was a large dense cloud, with a perfect bow of large magnitude, in colour somewhat like to skimm-milk ; but it was altogether more distinct than any one I had ever seen by day. Bell and Harry had seen them before ; but to me it was completely a novelty.

About this time our fishermen brought in two fish, of a kind which I have not yet described. One of them is called by some seamen the ballahoo, if I am not mistaken. It is a fish long, round, and slim, shaped much like the garr-fish ; but differs much in all but the body. The upper fly of the tail is short, and the under one four times the length : it has but few fins ; and in regard to its mouth it is very singular, as the under-jaw or mandible projects to ten times the length

of the upper, terminating in a very sharp point, so that it is impossible it should seize prey as other fish do. But nature has given it such address, that when lying on the surface of the water, and perceiving its object, it instantly darts forward, as an arrow from a bow, piercing its prey with its lower bill ; then sinking to the bottom, there it remains wounding it till it is no longer able to escape, and then devours it at pleasure. This fish is often to be seen in shoal water.

The other sort is a fish constructed much like the flying-fish, but grows to the size of an ordinary mullet. It is curiously marked with blue, green, yellow, brown, and red : the wings or fins are much longer than the whole body, tail and all, and almost transparent ; when they are extended they spread broader than a man's hand, and are beautifully variegated with many colours.

I shall now give some account of the great variety of lizards we met with in this quarter of the world. The most common are called the lion lizard. They are to be met with in great numbers in the heat of the day, and are exceedingly swift of foot, although they seem to go much on the belly, which is chequered, very like our common English green snake. The back is striped horizontally from head to tail with delicate broad stripes of a brown and yellow colour, resembling velvet. The male is very vicious, and much larger than the female. I have seen them above a foot in length. Their conjunction is lateral. When the male first espies the female, he protrudes a large bag from beneath his throat puffing out as full of wind, and drawing it back at pleasure, so that at other times it is not to be seen. This practice is common to the guano and all the lizard tribes.

Galliwasps. This is another species, frequenting the woods, and lurking much in holes in the ground, of a dark grey and black colour. The Indians say they bite sharply, but not poisonous, as reported by the Negroes in the West India islands. They are of the largest kind of lizards, and if pursued take to their holes; but smoke soon dislodges them. They are also very indolent, remaining long in one place without moving.

Satin lizard is another sort. They are of a solitary disposition. You seldom find more than one in a place; and that always in the shade, under a rock or in the chinks and clefts of rocks, where they lurk day and night. I have known them remain in one place for three days and nights without once changing their position. They are striped black, brown, white, and grey, and shine like satin as they move. They have one quality differing from all other kinds, which is the power of making their bodies so flat, that they can at pleasure adapt themselves to any small fissure or cleft they choose to occupy.

I have mentioned that sort called the wood-slave already; but to go through all their varieties is beyond my power. Some are yellow; others black, brown, and speckled. Some love the heat, and the driest time of the day; others are seldom seen but after rains. In general they live upon insects, and have the tongue forked like the snake.

It happened one evening, after all my family were retired to rest, that my wife being awake, shook me, and when I answered her, she said some one or other of them was sick, as she heard a sad moaning. She had scarcely spoken when I heard it myself. I got up immediately and called Harry; finding him well, we visited all the rest. No person was the least ill or

complaining, yet every now and then we heard sad and deep groans. We went to the dogs, but they were all well and quiet. We were quite at a loss to account for this. Sometimes it ceased for a short time, then began again; sometimes strong and deep, then again more faintly and weak; and thus it continued till the dawn. We none of us went to sleep the whole night, except the children. Bell now started an idea that some strange Indians had perhaps discovered us, and they might make this sad moaning to draw us into the woods; as the sound seemed to come from beyond the spot where we found the treasure. This notion I treated lightly; as, if such a discovery had really been made, and they came as enemies, they would have attacked and not alarmed us first to put us on our guard.

“What if it should be the departed spirit of the victim they left as a guard over their treasure?” said Harry.

This made us smile, but we had still fearful apprehensions. The women said they were sure some Indian or other person must be there in a dying state; it might be some of our friends who had received some hurt on his way to visit us. This, I must confess, was very plausible, and made considerable impression; the probability of it called for our immediate attention. I therefore told Bell that he and Harry might arm themselves and take the dogs with them to find out the cause. They immediately took guns, maschuts, &c. and set off boldly. In about twenty minutes they returned.

“What news?” said I, “Have you found it out?”

“Found it out!” said Bell, with a very serious countenance, “ay, ay, and if you had been with us, you would have found it out also.”

"Without hesitation, make me at once acquainted with it, whatever it may be ; I must be satisfied."

"It is one of the natives," said he, "of a most gigantic size, and dying as I believe ; but not one of our friends, as I never saw him come hither in their company ; nor do I think him of their tribe, as he differs greatly in colour from our friends. He shews not the least sense that we can perceive, except that of pain, for he groans heavily."

All this time Harry kept aloof ; the women were gathered round to hear the story, and standing with open mouths. Bell, after he had given his account, began to look seriously on the ground. I could not tell what to make of it ; I had some suspicions that all was not as we at first believed.

"He is not dead yet," said I, "for I hear him groan."

Bell could not support it any longer ; he burst into a loud laughter, and holding his head, said, "Messmate, I am to windward of you now." Harry came up at this moment, and joined in the laughter.

At length Bell said, "What do you think it may be?"

"You have the game all to yourselves," said I.

"Well, then," continued Bell, "it is yon great cotton-tree which was split by the lightning ; there is a broken limb which fell athwart another, and as the wind dies or freshens it rubs more or less with a groaning noise, but when near it you find the sound is unlike that of any human creature in distress."

If we had but courage to investigate the greater part of our fears, we should find they had no better grounds to rest on.

I now came to a determination to pay my visit to

my good friends to the southward ; and for the journey I got Bell to make us a knapsack each, to carry our roasted yams, &c. Harry was appointed pilot ; and the party consisted of Harry, Owen, myself, and my dog Rover. When the time of our departure came, I told Bell that I gave the whole charge of my family into his hands ; I was fully satisfied that during our absence he would be kind to my wife, and attentive to all the rest. Then calling them together, I charged them all, in every thing, to conform themselves to my friend's advice, as I had invested him with full authority, in my absence, to superintend all the affairs of our little colony. That mine was a journey of necessity, not of pleasure ; that I had promised our friends I would make them a visit, and I was resolved to keep my word. I took a sailor's leave of my wife and the rest, leaving them all abruptly, and in tears. Harry was affected ; the novelty of the journey pleased Owen, and for a time suspended his feelings. I shall say nothing of our journey, which was made after the manner that has been already described. We arrived all three in safety ; but as I and the child had not been used to such long marches our feet were much blistered. We drew near to their residence about five in the evening, very much fatigued, as we had been six days on our journey, sleeping every night on the bare ground, with a large fire round us : we lived scantily, as we got no more than four parrots and one pigeon during the whole journey. Harry, indeed, shot a duck in a pond, and as he could not get at it he wanted to send the dog in for it ; but this I at once remonstrated against, lest he might be devoured by the alligators. When we had got thus far, I made my

child sit down by me, and sent Harry into the town before us, to procure us a welcome reception. In a short time we heard a confused noise of many people advancing towards us, and soon after perceived a throng of men, women, and children, coming up with little bells, calabashes, and a rude kind of flute, making altogether, a most confused noise ; Gatta-loon, Harry, and several other faces I was well acquainted with, were at their head. We rose to meet them. Gatta-loon came forward and took me by the hand, with a generous smile on his face, and gave me a most kind welcome. There appeared in the countenances of them all the expression of true benevolence, mingled in a degree with admiration. I felt a sensation of delight, and my spirits were exhilarated beyond what I can describe ; my fatigue was forgotten, and my heart only open to those impressions of benignity and tenderness which were reflected from every countenance around me.

Owen kept close to me, as we went into their ranges of houses or wigwams, and observed every thing with the greatest astonishment, it being the first time he had ever made his appearance in public. Every object he saw excited new admiration ; every fresh scene was a scene of wonder and delight. I had dressed him for the occasion, and he really looked like a young cupid, with his sheaf of arrows at his back, and his bow over his arm. We were led to a wigwam something larger than the rest, and at the entrance were met by Zulawana and others. There sat on a mat a very ancient woman, to whom Zulawana led up my child. She took great pains to examine him, her sight being dim through age. She then placed her left hand on his shoulder, and muttered some few words, which I desired might be interpreted to me, and it was to this

effect: "Let not an arrow hit him; let not fire burn him, a tree fall on him, or the water choke him; all you strong men preserve him from the evil spirit of those who would hurt or destroy him in his years of youth and tenderness."

Harry now observed to me that she was one of their good cunning women, and had told many strange things, and that an Indian had said to him they expected us this moon, she having foretold it to them for some days. The young Indians flocked round Owen, and by gentle usage coaxed him out, and began to show him their dexterity with the bow and arrows. Owen having his uncle Harry at his side, took courage, and shewed them some proofs of his skill. Some of the children would gently touch him, and then look on their own fingers, thinking his colour might rub off as he was fairer than they were: notwithstanding he had more the appearance of an Indian than a European.

CHAPTER XXVIII.

WHEN I had been with them about two days, Gatta-loon said he was mighty glad I had turned Spaniard, as there was at that time an old Spanish soldier come among them, and he intended to come and see me in a short time, being then absent with two of their people; but he had taken care to spread the report that I was of that nation. This put me on my guard, and it was now necessary that I should act the Spaniard indeed, which I was resolved to do in the best manner I could. Soon after this he came, and saluted me after the Spanish manner. I returned the civility, and a conversation commenced. I gave him my whole history; that I was a native of Barcelona, but had when a boy entered into the service of an English gentleman who was at that time in Venice; went with him to England, &c.: that in the course of time I had lost much of my mother tongue, and after a multitude of changes became a servant to a gentleman bound to England from Jamaica, was taken, carried into the Havannah, and put prisoner on board a Spanish man-of-war; that after many other turns of fortune I was lost in a canoe on this shore, where I had resided many years, part of the time quite alone. He seemed amazed at what I related, and said he found I could not speak Spanish fluently, but that I looked like a Biscayan very much. He then asked my name, and I told him it was Louis Penalosa. In the course of conversation, I mentioned a circumstance which had happened when I was a prisoner. On this

the old man gave a start, and said he remembered the affair well, being a marine on board that ship. I inquired his name. He said it was Pablo Nunez. I did not remember his person. He asked me if I recollect a man whose name was Nick Jones? I said, "Very well."

"Ay," said he, "he was placed sentry over me, while in the stocks for drunkenness ;" calling him Nico Yone.

While we were thus talking, I called my son Owen. The child came to me. Nunez took him by the hand, and said, "Good boy, habla Inglese, yo habla Inglese tam bien : what is your name, boy ?"

"Owen," he answered.

I begged the old man to inform me where he had learned English. He said he had been taken by the English in the reign of Queen Anne ; that he was a prisoner in a castle near Portsmouth. On being released, he went in Sir John Norris's fleet ; was up the Baltic with him in a ship called the Boyne ; and remembered Peter the Great when on board the fleet, and gave some anecdotes of him : particularly that he refused to drink the Queen's health with the Admiral, out of a silver pint can ; but ordered a pipe of wine on the quarter-deck, then calling for an axe, knocked in the head, took a mess-can and dipped into it ; then lifting the can to his head, drank such a quantity that Norris would not venture to do the like. Also, that to please him, the Admiral ordered a sham engagement ; and that Peter took up a shot in his hand, desiring the Admiral would use some of them, as it was mere children's play without them. The Admiral begged to be excused, as he could not make so free with his mistress's subjects.

In a day or two the old man grew very fond of me. He said, "Ah ! brother Englese, I have no wife or children, neither have I any provision from the crown, now I am become old and no longer of service. I have been from the old country more than thirty years, and should I return to Burgos, where I was born, no one would know me there at this day, without plata. I have been a fool in my time, and have now nothing left, but poverty, rags, and grey hairs ;" Then giving a heavy sigh, said, "he was grown weary of time, having been put off so many delays for a passage home, where, if he arrived, the poor pension that would be allowed was not worth going for. He had for some time followed the profession of a barber, and a maker of segarros, until he had rambled hither, thinking that he would end his days after the simple mode of the Indians, as he had now no more care for this world, not believing that he had a friend in existence."

The old man delivered his story in such plain honest terms, that I at once said to him, "Pablo Nunez, do you know how to keep a faithful friend if you should find one ?"

He at once fixed his eyes on me and replied, "What interest can these grey hairs find in falsehood at my time of life ? I am now seventy years of age ; my stay in this world is but short ; I would willingly pass it in peace and quiet, to prepare myself for a better."

"Could you be content," said I, "to reside at my habitation with me and my family ; to fare as we do ; to eat your morsel with cheerfulness ? All I can offer you is a resting-place from your labour, and the society of a few very sincere friends."

"My good friend Penalosa, all my ambition is to

pass the short remainder of my days in peaceful tranquillity ; if, beyond this, I am favoured with your friendship and the sweet society of your family, my joys will be complete. There is but one thing more I would claim, which I am sure you will not deny me, a quiet grave, and that you will lay me in it as a friend and brother."

I took him by the hand, and said I accepted him as one of my family ; but I must insist on one previous condition, which was, that he would swear never to betray the confidence I was ready to place in him. He immediately put his hand to his breast, and swore by the blessed Virgin that he would be true and faithful to me and mine. This he did in presence of all our mutual friends ; who as soon as they understood what had passed gave a joyful shout of approbation. He was thus elected a member of our little society.

I now wished to depart as soon as possible, which I mentioned to my old friends, who were by no means against it, as they knew my reasons. I agreed with Gaynosanto to make me two stout canoes, for which I promised to pay fifty dollars. He engaged to get them made, and to bring them round to us in about three moons. Observing hides among them, I proposed they should load the canoes with them, and some cotton cloth and matts, for all which I would make them ample satisfaction. This business concluded, I prepared to return by sea, as old Nunez could not travel so far by land. This they said was proper, and every thing was got ready for the purpose. After having been with them near a fortnight, we left them in four canoes ; our company consisted of Gatta-loon as commander-in-chief, Zulawana and seven other Indians, with ourselves.

We set sail with a favourable south-west wind, and stood away large after we got clear of their creek. This took us the whole day. We then put in-shore and landed on a beach. The Indians soon made up a shelter of bushes, and we composed ourselves to rest for that night. Early at the peep of day we were off again ; but the wind fell so, that they took to their paddles. Sometimes they stood, at other times they paddled upon their knees. We went at the rate of seven knots an hour. In the evening we put into a low head-land full of trees ; but as the moon rose soon after, we remained there but a short time, just to eat, and then put off again. I observed they acted with great caution, speaking in a low voice ; and thus we proceeded till about twelve o'clock ; then put in again, took a short nap in our canoes, and about five got a fair wind again. I now found Zulawana began to grow uneasy, frequently urging on the Indians whenever the wind fell. I was anxious to know the cause of this ; but as they spoke in their own tongue I could only catch a word now and then. However I was soon informed by Harry, that as the moon was then going to turn sides, there might come on a strong wind from the north, with rain ; and if so we should be obliged to put in, and perhaps remain there some days. This was no very agreeable news ; but as we were not the pilots, and had no part of the direction, we were silent.

This evening Zulawana told me that we should see the Long Key near my place the next morning, if they only went to sleep for a few hours. This we agreed to, and put out about five again. But we had not composed ourselves long before I felt a cool breeze from the north. I hinted to Nunez that I did not

like our birth, and proposed that we should put into a small bay on the other side of the point we were now at. This was complied with, and we hauled up the boats. It now came on to rain, the clouds gathered, and the Indians began to prepare shelter as fast as possible ; and thus we remained for three days. Poor Owen shivered with the cold, as he had never been exposed to the like before, though to us the change was scarcely perceptible.

On the third day, when we had eaten up all our provisions, I took Harry out with me to see if we could shoot any thing ; but in a short time the Indians sounded a shell for us to return. We did so ; and Zula-wana proposed, as it was now almost become a calm, that we should push for it ; and away we went. The Indians began to work away with all their might. My poor boy was almost famished for want of food. At last they all began to sing, Gatta-loon shewing the example. When I asked the reason, they said we should see our place soon. This I could not well credit ; but in about an hour after, one of the Indians called out and pointed with his finger, and I saw the point of a low spit of land, which they told me was where I lived ; but on my standing up I found it to be our Long Key. Upon this I told Harry to begin his song, which I knew would please them. This gave them all fresh spirits, and in about two hours we came in with it.

The pleasure I felt on our arrival was next to that of landing on my native shore. I immediately went off with my gun, others to strike fish, giving orders to have a good fire made up in the mean time. In about two hours we all assembled, and relieved our craving stomachs with what we had procured. About three

o'clock we embarked again. I anxiously looked out for our signal, but saw none, as they had not seen us when we came within the bay. I now took up a shell, and gave my usual blast, soon after which I saw our flag out, which rejoiced me much. When we got within the lagoon, I heard Bell's conch sound, which I well knew, as we had each of us a different mode of blowing, so as to know each other's blast. When we were in sight of the landing-place, we saw all our family out dancing and singing. Owen jumped out, and swam to shore, and when we all landed, the joy of meeting was so universal and so great, that I shall not pretend to describe it particularly ; I will only observe, that my wife expressed her satisfaction by a flood of tears. Bell told me that all had been well in my absence, and that they had longed every hour for my return. After an absence of three weeks, we were now once more reinstated in the bosom of our family. We had left three dogs at home ; Harry being so great a sportsman that he now and then begged one from his friends. Rover seemed as glad of his return as any of us, and as he was frisking about with the other dogs, I missed Swift ; on enquiring, I was informed that he had died about five days after our departure, in consequence of the bite of a snake.

This little absence had made my home more delightful to me than ever. I introduced old Nunez to my friend Bell and all my family, representing him in the most favourable light. Our friends the Indians staid with us four days, and on the third, Soroteet, or the crab-catcher, was missing for a time. At length he came down the hill with a small basket of flowers, which he had gathered in the woods. These, to our great surprise, he presented to Jessy. She received

them very graciously, which increased our wonder. Then they both came to me, and Soroteet asked me if I would suffer him to remain among us, if Jessy would accept of him as a husband? I asked Gatta-loon if it was agreeable to them that it should be so, on which condition I was willing to give my consent, as I took it for granted the affair had been settled between him and Harry while we were at their place, which I soon found to have been the case. All agreed to the proposal, and the marriage took place immediately; after which they took their leave of us in perfect good humour and friendship.

My first care was now to build two new wigwams, to accommodate the increase of our family. I proposed that Bell and old Nunez should live in one, and the new married couple in the other. They were soon finished, and taken possession of accordingly. Bell, Nunez, my wife, and I, always messed together; and we lived in perfect harmony, without any incident worth relating, to the conclusion of my seventeenth year.

CHAPTER XXIX.

EIGHTEENTH YEAR OF MY RESIDENCE.

SOON after the commencement of this my eighteenth year, about nine o'clock in the evening, we heard the report of several heavy guns in the offing. Bell ran up the hill, but could perceive no flashes. This surprised us much, and we knew not how to account for it; but old Nunez observed it might be guarda costas, as the Spaniards had several out to prevent the contraband trade since the late peace.

"Late peace!" said I. "Surely peace between the two nations has been established for many years."

"My good friend," replied Nunez, "in your retirement you have been very fortunately ignorant of the calamities of Europe. Peace is but just concluded, another war having taken place since that you and I were concerned in."

On the 17th day of July, as our people were busy making torches, about ten in the forenoon, to our great surprise, we heard a gun fired, as from some vessel near the shore. This was a novelty indeed, and what to think, or how to act, we could not immediately tell. Away ran Harry up the hill, and soon came down with the news, that there was a fine ship right off, not far from the Long Key, with the flag out.

"Hoot, hoot, mon," said Bell, "that canna be; but let us gang up the hill and see what a' this may come to."

We at once ascended the hill, and saw a large sloop quite in-shore with our bay.

"This is strange indeed," said I; "how are we to act on this occasion? You see they have hauled down their colours three times. They have certainly discovered us by the great fire that was made this morning, and would speak with us. We are in a critical situation, and it requires some exercise of judgment to know how we are to proceed."

By means of the glass I could plainly perceive she had up a St. George's jack.

"They are English!" I cried; "or if Spaniards, they have at length discovered our retreat, and are come to learn what we are here upon."

"Well," said Bell, "suppose they are, if you are willing we will go off to them. What have we to fear? Let the worst come if it will. What think you they would do with a couple of such forlorn fellows as we are?"

At length we determined that Bell and old Nunez should go off to them. No sooner said than done. We acquainted Nunez with our intention, and all was at once hurry and confusion to get ready the yawl for the occasion; which being done, off they went without arms or any thing but water. I gave Bell and Nunez such directions as I thought it would be prudent to follow. I saw them clear out of the lagoon, and then along-side the sloop. My heart began to beat violently, and I reflected with myself that this day would produce some important event, but whether favourable or disastrous to us was yet uncertain. I determined to keep up my spirits, and to prepare my mind for whatever might happen. I thought every minute of their ab-

sence an hour, so great was my anxiety. In about four hours they returned, and gave the following account of their expedition. Bell said he found her to be a Bermudian built sloop; she mounted guns, and had altogether a warlike appearance; her bottom was as white as a hound's tooth. As they drew near her, he plainly heard some one say in English, "a rope for the boat," with an oath tacked to the end of it. He then hailed them in Spanish, and was answered in the same language. When he got on board, he asked from whence they came, and was answered from Killiecranky. This sounded odd to him, but he soon found they were English.

"Well," said I, "and what has brought them hither? I suppose by their warlike appearance they are pirates."

"No, no," he replied, "they are what you may call fair traders; and we can purchase some flour of them, if you think proper."

"Well," said I; "and how did you pass on them?"

"As a true Spaniard," he said; "and they have no suspicion to the contrary. I told them we lived five miles up the country, and that we would purchase from them if they remained a day or two. Upon which they desired to know where they could water, and I directed them to the point of Long Key. So I think I have executed my commission tolerably well."

"Well, then," I replied, "we must, in the first place, get out a parcel of our dollars and boil them in hot water and ashes to get off their blackness. But what may they ask per barrel?"

"Thirty pieces of eight," said he.

"That may be a trifle to us," I added; "but

money enough for them, God knows ! How many will they spare us ? ”

“ As many as we want. For seeing our signal of smoke as they thought, they brought to, and fired a gun to shew they were well disposed to trade with us.”

“ What do you really take them to be ? ”

“ Why, they are from America, and are upon what they call the fair thing.”

I told Bell we shculd now be under the necessity of discovering the secret of our cash to old Nunez. He said if it must be so, and he had sworn to be faithful to us, it might not be amiss to swear him again on my Bible ; and at the same time let him know that we are Englishmen, as in the course of time he must know it ; and he believed he already suspected the truth, by our speaking English so often, and by some small hints he let fall at times. I agreed with him in opinion ; and as we had no time to spare, desired Bell to open it to him immediately in Spanish ; and sent for him for the purpose.

When he came, Bell began with him to the following effect : “ Signor Nunez, my friend and I have sent for you for the purpose of making such communications as must at once convince you of our sincere friendship, and the implicit confidence we place in your integrity and judgment. You know that your joining our society was at your own particular desire ; and that you have sworn to be true to us in all things, and to keep secret what shall be imparted to you in confidence. This I believe is the only compact between us.”

Nunez at once acknowledged the agreement, and said “ we might depend on his obedience to our will in all things, as he was sure we should exact from him no compliance that would do violence to his honour or his

religion. He was a poor old man, almost useless, and entirely dependent on our generosity for the comforts and conveniences he enjoyed."

" Well, then," said Bell, " as we are about to convince you of our good opinion, by the discovery of treasure, of which we mean you to be a partaker, you will certainly not object to swear once more on the contents of this holy book, that you will inviolably keep secret what we shall now unfold to you. We are two plain honest men, and have no evil in our hearts against you or any man on earth. The book I now put into your hand contains the Holy Scriptures ; this cross which I lay upon it is in commemoration only of him who suffered for lost mankind, and by whose holy gospel you bind yourself to us."

He dropped on his knees, kissed the book with the greatest reverence, at the same time pronouncing his oath aloud, and with great energy.

Bell then acquainted him that we were Englishmen, and described to him the treasure we had found, and where it was now deposited. We found that he had suspected our being Englishmen ; and for the rest, we might rely upon his fidelity, he said ; and returned us thanks for the honour we had done him by admitting him a member of our family ; and the important secret we had intrusted him with, he would ever hold sacred and inviolate.

I then set him, Bell, and Harry, to work with the dollars. When the old man first beheld our treasure he was truly astonished, and cried out, " Santa Maria ! mucho plata per cierta ! Maravillosa !"

When this business was done, early the next day I sent off Bell, Nunez, and Harry in the yawl, with a quantity of money, yams, plantains, potatoes, oranges,

limes, and beans, to traffic with them in the best manner they could, and to make such presents to the officers as they thought fit ; also to purchase any thing they knew we stood most in need of, and bring an account of what they might have to dispose of.

About twelve o'clock the boat returned. Bell told me he had agreed for twelve barrels of flour, and a goat with young, to be delivered at the old plantation ; a barrel of gunpowder ; shot of different sizes ; a parcel of flints, nails, fish-hooks, clasp-knives ; two saws ; six chisels ; two adzes ; five hatchets ; three axes, and some other articles. He said they acted with great caution and dispatch, and enquired much about the guarda costas. The captain's name he could not learn ; but as the cargo consisted of many other articles, he advised me to visit the sloop myself. I might pass for an Irishman, and I could then please myself. I resolved to take his advice ; and as my wife had never been on board any vessel, I determined to take her with me. So, early on the morrow we set off ; my wife, Bell, Owen, and I, in the yawl ; Nunez and Harry in the old canoe ; leaving Soroteet as a guard at home. When we came alongside, Bell went first on board, and told them that I was a neighbour and partner of his ; that I was born in Ireland, but had resided many years in that country ; that the Indian woman was my wife, and the boy my son. I had given Owen a charge to say his name was Muskelly, if he should be asked, but otherwise not to speak ; for if he did in English they would carry him away with them, and he would never see me again. I had no occasion to say more to him ; this was sufficient caution. After we had been on board some time, I asked them how they came into

these parts, so very remote, as Killicranky was in Scotland?

Upon this they said, "there might be more places of the same name; and if I did not ask so many questions, they would not tell me so many lies."

"Well, then, faith and troth," said I, "I know how to keep my breath to cool my porridge."

I bought of them a large grindstone; two watches; two dozen of white beaver hats; five pieces of striped linen; some thread, Osnaburghs, and twine. Bell produced his small diamonds, and a little fellow who seemed to be a doctor was put to examine them; they had them for the value of about 200 dollars in truck; but we observed this part of the game was played under the rose, in the roundhouse. We likewise bought another watch for our friend Nunez; needles, pins, scissors, razors, ravenduck, a good telescope, as that I had was but a very indifferent one; some medicines and lancets, which were chosen by Bell; some penknives; two large iron pots; cordage; a goose and gander, with a drake and duck; and well did we pay for them. We had likewise a few quart bottles and phials; also a mallet; two dozen sail needles; three marlinspikes, and a dozen of small blocks; several kinds of small stuff, such as rat-line, mar-line, spun-yarn, &c. Bell took notice of some small red-framed looking-glasses, and it immediately struck me that they would serve as presents to our Indian neighbours, as well as a few for our own use. We therefore bought three dozen of them; a dozen of table knives and forks, and many other articles.

When our traffic was at an end, they seemed to wish our departure, and we wanted their company as little. We therefore at once took our leave, and as

we were going off heard the order given to run up their anchor, and hoist the jib, which being done, away they went close hauled with the wind at south ; and we made for the shore, glad enough they had paid us the visit, and as glad of their departure, as we wanted no more of their company.

When we had got all our purchase home safe, we were as busy as bees in arranging the different articles. We lodged our flour in the kitchen, and when we came to the white hats, I put one on each of their heads, and they were not a little proud of this distinction. We now began to make shirts, shifts, trowsers, and the like, so that in a short time we were quite fine. My wife expressed her wonder at every thing she had seen, for it was all new to her. She called the roundhouse, the little wigwam of the great men ; the hold, the long kitchen of my countrymen ; but she said she did not like them, as they were very impudent, for they looked through her eyes when she offered to open them.

Owen and Harry remarked, they could not think how so many people could find victuals to eat, and how they could carry those great heavy shooters. Owen thought it strange to see them run up the shrouds, and pull the ropes through the blocks ; but the drum was what struck them most, how they could possibly put so much noise into that thing, with no more than two little sticks.

Bell, when on board, begged to have a gun fired, to see what effect it would have on the Indians, and they obliged him with three. When the first went off, Harry ran to me, got behind my back, stared like a wild cat, and shook like a leaf, crying out, "ow, ow, ow." Owen fell down, and roared aloud. But it had

a different effect on my wife ; she stood motionless, with her eyes closed ; as she began to recover, she desired me to be going, for she was sure such another knock would shake her head off, and split her heart.

The women had each of them a looking-glass presented to them, in which they were constantly looking, and called them water-stones. But the watches were the objects of the greatest wonder to all ; nor could we persuade them but that there must be a spider or some such small insect within them, made Owyooks of, or as we call witches, to keep always moving and ticking. To preserve them, we were obliged in a degree to give into their notion, by informing them that no one must touch them, but those who had learned the charm on the other side the great water. This succeeded so well, that not a soul would touch a watch on any persuasion whatever. Harry and Owen, if they saw either of us go to wind one up, would immediately withdraw to some distance. This was just as we would have it, otherwise our watches would be soon spoiled. But what is remarkable, my young Rees could never be brought to fear a watch in the least ; and this gave us some trouble, as we were obliged to make fobs to carry them about with us, or hang them very high in the evenings out of reach.

After a short time we made leaven, and kneaded cakes. Our ladies became so exceedingly fond of them, that I was sorry we had not purchased more flour, or that we had procured any at all ; as in our situation, to increase our wants was, on the first deprivation, to increase our misery. The introduction therefore of any comfort or accommodation that could not be continued was impolitic, and productive of more injury than service. We found, by our mode of making

eakes, that there was considerable waste. I therefore proposed to Bell, that we should contrive, if possible, to make an oven. As this was an undertaking of some magnitude, I began to restrict them in the use of flour, until the oven should be built. Bell proposed making bricks, and burning lime of shells; but Nunez told us we need not give ourselves all this trouble, as he saw we could make yabbas well enough; why should we not raise a large deep oven in somewhat the same form, and make a clay hearth for it to rest on, which, when well burnt, we had only to heat properly, and lay our bread on it, then turn down the large yabba oven over it, covering the whole occasionally with hot ashes? The process was certainly simple, and we immediately began to form one, in which we succeeded to our wishes. Nunez then, with the help of Harry, built a small thatched shed over it, and in this oven we baked now and then, when Bell, who had been appointed our steward, thought proper. Thus we had commonly bread three times a-week, and about half a pound each. I soon perceived, however, as our meal was not like the widow's that wasted not, that the oven would be useless in a little time for want of flour; and to make it last the longer, from this time we used to mix yams, plantains, &c. with the flour, and produced very good bread with these ingredients.

Thus our time passed away happily in love and friendship; it is true, that we were confined to a solitary shore, but we were unmolested in our retreat, and enjoyed a constant round of tranquillity; we had no wants but what we could well supply, and must have been the most ungrateful of mortals, if we did not thank God for his blessings, and learn to be content with our lot. I could not help frequently looking

back to the forlorn situation in which I was first cast upon this shore ; without fire, food, or raiment, to comfort, to support, or to cover me ; exposed to the scorching rays of the sun by day, and to the heavy dews by night. Yet had God spread a table for me in this wilderness ; he had comforted, fed, and clothed me ; he had changed my solitary life to the pleasures of society ; he had given me friends, relations, children ; beyond the simple necessaries of life, we were surrounded with conveniences, with comforts, I might almost say with luxuries. This was the state of my outward condition, but my mind had undergone a still greater revolution. When I was thrown upon this coast, I was an idle, thoughtless, dissolute being, with passions raging in my bosom, over which I exercised no controul, and which in their gratification might have led me to an early grave : the obligations of society sat loosely on me, more from want of reflection than from any radical depravity ; I was not void of principle, but my irregular appetites and the bad example of others, which I had not fortitude to resist, prevailed over my best resolutions. In fact, I was hardly to be looked upon as a thinking being. That circumstance of my life which I considered as the greatest calamity that could happen to any human being, (so little do we know of the designs of Providence,) turned out to be the most fortunate ; for to that accident which separated me from my disorderly companions, and left me naked, as it were, on this shore, I owe, not only all the happiness I at present enjoy, but the assurance of a still greater portion hereafter. My solitary situation restored me to myself ; my almost miraculous preservation taught me to reflect ; reflection brought to my view the errors of my past life, my ingratitude

to my God, and my disobedience to my earthly parent. I became another creature ; my very soul seemed to be purified ; God gave me strength and fortitude to bear my sufferings with an equal,—with a contented mind. I trusted in him and he delivered me ; “ he hath turned my heaviness into joy, and girded me with gladness ; therefore, O my God, I will give thanks unto thee for ever !”

CHAPTER XXX.

ABOUT the latter end of September, Bell and I went on a party of recreation ; we took Owen with us, intending to fish when we came into deep water. As we got out of the lagoon the wind came round to east, and Bell proposed that we should make some stretches into the offing ; we did so till we got about five miles out beyond the east point of Long Key. This was the greatest distance I had been right out in my whole time. Now the wind began to die away, whereas we had expected to return with a fine leading breeze. I proposed to stand in again. “ As you please,” said he ; and away we went before it for the space of half an hour, when it died away and became stark calm. We found a small current running to the westward.

“ Here we are, messmate,” said I ; “ but how are we to get back ?”

“ We must take to our oars,” he said.

“ And a pretty pull we shall have of it,” I replied ;

" we shall drive a league below the Key, before we can get in again."

We set hard to it, and in about half an hour got within the current way, and then determined to try for some fish, when the water should shoal a little. While we were thus talking, we observed on the surface of the sea something that had the appearance of a white ball, and the water in agitation all round it. In a short time after, it suddenly rose above the water to the height of three feet or more. We lay on our oars to observe it. This was repeated several times. We could not conceive what it could be, but resolved to row gently towards it. When we were within about thirty yards, we could discern it to be that kind of fish called the hedge-hog, or globe-fish. This fish has the power of swelling itself up, so as to become round like a ball, and is armed at all points with long and sharp darts. Round this fish were gathered three or four dolphins, who would every now and then strike it out of the water with their tails; when the globe-fish fell back on the surface, it would paddle away with its under fin to some distance, very swiftly, and then the game was renewed. They went on thus for a considerable time, till Bell chanced to make too rough a movement with his oar, when it sunk at once like a stone; so that we conceived it to be mere sport, as the globe-fish could thus disengage itself at pleasure from the dolphins that surrounded it. This scene was a direct confutation of the common notion of sailors, that the dolphin is never seen within soundings, as at this time we had not above eighteen fathoms of water, and over patches of rocks.

We now began to fish in about twelve fathoms, and soon had a quantity of different kinds around us, among

which were the largest amber fish we had ever seen. As we were busy at our sport, we observed a fish would follow up what we had taken upon our hooks, of a kind we had never before seen: but as it did not shew itself high enough to give its true shape, I shall give the best description I am able. It appeared as black as a coffin when covered with velvet, with a very large fin on the back, running its whole length. On the highest part of this fin, right over the shoulders, was a kind of whip about sixteen inches long; the upper fork of the tail had the same kind of appendage to it, and these it continually kept playing about. The whole fish might be about four feet in length. It seemed to be very active amongst the other fish, driving about here and there, and appeared to be very voracious; yet it would not touch our bait, nor could we perceive that it offered to snap at the other fish. I wished very much to take one of them, but found it impossible.

Soon after, a small cat's paw came in from seaward, and we got up our killick, set our sail and stood in for the bay, with the wind increasing, so that we soon arrived with our cargo of fish. Among those we had taken, were two sorts which deserve some notice; they are called morays, and are commonly about four feet long from head to tail, which ends in a complete point. They are shaped somewhat like a sword, having fins running the whole length above and below. This fish is flat, and not round like an eel, but moves just like one, twisting itself into various knots, and bites sharply. One sort is green as a leek; the other finely mottled with white, black, and yellow. The leopard's skin cannot be more beautiful.

By this time we had several young fowls about us; and Harry one day brought home half a dozen flamingoes. While the children were picking them, Bell observed to me that for the sake of novelty he would make a fowl-pie, with my wife's assistance; which was done, and baked nicely in our fine new oven: so that now we could boil, roast, bake, stew, barbecue, &c. &c. Old Nan, our goat, brought two kids, and they soon began to be so mischievous, that we were obliged to keep a sharp look out over what linen we were possessed of; for whenever they could come at it, they would chew and nibble it to a rag presently. At length they found their way to my store of paper, and began their depredations accordingly. It was with great difficulty I kept the worm from it; but this was a more serious enemy, and must be immediately provided against. We held a council how to proceed. Bell said as my wattling work had proved so useful, he was resolved to make a sort of hovel for the goats, fowls, &c. We all went to work immediately with much spirit; but it took us up six weeks before we had completed it to our satisfaction. It was divided into four apartments: one for the goats, with its own door; another for the fowls; so that they could never get out in the morning without our permission. The apartment for the dogs was open at all times; the last we made our store-room, which was three times the size of the others, and in it we stowed our dry wood. Our gunpowder we kept at a good distance, under a cavern of the rocks in the earth.

The next business Bell undertook was to build a kind of fence round the side of the stream for our geese and ducks, so contrived that they could with ease play in it without wandering too far away, with a

small house for them in one corner of the fence. By the time the whole was finished it had somewhat the appearance of a farm-yard ; and by this arrangement we preserved our live stock from the tigers and wild cats. Indeed these gentry seldom troubled us now. It was my delight in the morning to hear the crowing of the cock, and the innocent noises of the goats, geese, and ducks, calling the boys to give them their daily allowance.

Some short time after this, about twelve o'clock in the day, one of our dogs took off up the hill at full speed. Upon this Bell turned out with his gun. I begged him not to venture too far from home. Harry soon followed him with his. They did not return in less than two hours. They said they had followed the dog for more than three miles, as they were sure he had scent of a deer by the dung they found ; and that on their return, they had found a nest of bees in an old tree full of combs. I inquired how far off it was. They said about a mile ; and they were resolved to take it that evening, which was the best time. I advised them against it, and said, if they would leave it till the next day I would go with them. Nothing would do but they must set off at once. All I could do was to see they were well armed. They took each a gun and maschut, with fire and powder. I was in great anxiety during their absence ; but in about two hours they returned victorious, with a fine parcel of combs. I desired to know how they had gained their prize. They told me they first made up a good fire ; then they suffocated them with a squib. As no mischance had happened, we were rejoiced at their success ; and we soon found the women knew better what to do with the honey than to make bread.

As I happened to be out very early the next morn-

ing, I perceived, to my astonishment, a great smoke blow over our cliff. I immediately called out the rest. They were all much alarmed. I told them this was certainly the consequence of their last night's excursion ; I was sure they had left fire in the woods, and if the wind continued southerly, we should be burnt out.

We went up the hill and found it to be as I said ; the fire was spread far and wide, and made a dreadful appearance.

"Well," said I, "you have found out an excellent method to rid us of tiger fears."

"Well," said Bell, "and so be it."

"Ay, but you will now be at a loss for fuel, unless you go further a-field for it."

"Never fear," replied Harry, "it will not come down below us ;" and I found he was right, for it stopped at the brow of the hill.

The smoke continued above three days. When the whole was over we took a walk and found all our traps destroyed ; every thing was laid waste, so that the place for the extent of two miles was quite naked and bare. Upon the whole, I must confess I was not entirely displeased, as the harbour for wild beasts was certainly broken up by it. Though, on the other hand, it was useful to us, and added greatly to the picturesque beauty of our habitation, which now bore a dreary and melancholy appearance. This affair happened about the 27th of December, so that we had a rare fire to keep Christmas with.

Nothing worth notice happened for some time after this, except that we were pestered with hawks after our chickens so that the boys were fully employed in watching them. The cat too made bold now and then

with a chick or two ; but by tying him up with a bunch of feathers round his neck and under his nose, he left off the game. The hawks we put in dread, by fixing a pole with a cross on the top, on which we hung the dead hawks we had shot. Having provided against this, we were attacked by another enemy, a large sort of snake, that would swallow the chicken whole. Owen and Harry often shot them. The latter would roast and eat them, saying, they were a great delicacy. At length Bell and Nunez conquered their prejudices, and partook of them too.

One day I entered our dwelling, and casting my eyes on our child America, as she lay sleeping on a few plantain leaves, I discovered a monstrous centipede extended across her throat. The sight agitated me greatly, as I knew if it should sting the infant in that tender part, the agony it would throw her into might prove mortal. I was terrified lest the movement of its feet might awaken the child, and she might put up her hand to remove what had disturbed her, in which case it would either sting her hand or throat.—I therefore gently clapped my hand down by it, and with a sudden jerk cast it clear from her. I then killed it, and put it into some spirits we kept for that purpose, knowing it to be the best antidote against this poison by rubbing the part injured with it, and it never failed to assuage the anguish, and reduce the swelling. These insects are of a yellow brown colour, and their general size from four to eight inches in length, and in breadth scarcely an inch. They are scaled on the back, as in joints, with a pair of forceps or pincers at the tail, and when angry they erect them in a curve forward, emitting venom through small apertures into the wound, which turns the part quite livid, and brings on a most ex-

cruciating torment, which sometimes lasts three or four hours.

I remember one day as my wife was leaning against the rock, and I was talking to her, I perceived a large scorpion close by her face. I withdrew gently, and called her away. When I had got her from the place, I shewed it to her, and she was not a little thankful, that by my precaution she had escaped the bite of this malignant insect. I called Bell, and taking a bottle with a small quantity of brandy, by an artful twitch he contrived to get it into the bottle. We perceived that it emitted a drop of some liquid, and it was full fifteen minutes before the spirit had so overpowered it, that it might be considered as dead.

The scorpions are not large, as we never saw one above four inches in length, most of them being from two and a half to three inches. They are shaped in the forepart something like a lobster, having claws, but differ much abaft, as I may say, for they have a tail of several joints, at the end of which is inserted a kind of hook. This they use after the same manner as the centipede. They are of a pale dirty yellow, and carry their young on their backs. Our Indians say, that if any of their young should chance to come before them, they will at once devour them. Harry one day shewed me one, and said I should see him make it kill itself. He made a circle of burning coals round it. The scorpion endeavoured to escape for a time: at length finding that to be impossible, it began to turn up its sting, and in a few moments wounded itself to death. This insect, as well as the centipede, frequents damp and retired places, and never voluntarily approaches the light of the day.

As I am now speaking of insects, I will mention

something about the spiders, though I will not pretend to give a description of the many sorts that are to be met with here; but perhaps the characters of a few may give some entertainment. I will begin with that which is of the greatest magnitude; and I protest I have seen some that would spread the full extent of a man's fingers and thumb. These are very common, and make webs exceedingly strong, but are not venomous, although they have sharp black teeth, and bite if disturbed. They sometimes appear with a large round white belly about the size of half a dollar; but this large body proves to be nothing more than a bag, in which they carry their young. This bag they can dismiss at the proper season, and then they lodge it against some shelf or place, from which the young come forth at their appointed time. There is another sort of them, to which I gave the name of the tiger. It has no settled place of abode, nor does it ever spin any web, but keeps on a constant cruise after the flies. It is striped black and white. Nothing can exceed the craft and artifice of this insect. When lying in wait for his prey, you may see him on the side of a tree, rock, or such other place, where flies frequent. Here he lies as if asleep; but as soon as any fly fixes within the distance of about two feet from him, he directly, with a sudden motion of his body, faces about, and with his short legs advances slowly towards him; but if the fly moves his position ever so little, in an instant he points the same way, and for a short time lies motionless, then begins again to advance exceedingly slow, till he comes within the distance of about eight inches, when he jumps at once on the poor victim, and devours him.

There is another kind not so large, which Bell called

red-poops, having their after parts as red as vermillion. These keep in corners, and are constantly spinning threads, and running up and down them. If they see a grub or the like, they drop down by a thread, and give it a gentle touch, which instantly kills it; then they fix more lines to it, and draw the body up by degrees, hand over hand, as our sailors would a bucket of tar into the main-top. We found it necessary to kill them whenever they were found in our habitation, as they would at times drop down and give us one of their gentle touches, which never failed to occasion an inflammatory burning, so that it became necessary to apply oil or brandy, either of which would at once assuage the pain.

At times we found a very large spider, back in the uplands, which deserves to be particularly described. This sort frequents banks which face the rising sun, where they make their cells; they are black and white. One day as I was out with my gun, with Harry and Owen, the latter bid me look on the bank, and see the great spiders, how they stopped their holes. I did not attend to him at first; but Harry desired me to halt, and said if I went on slowly I should see a fine thing. Soon after I observed these spiders run into their holes, and shut the doors after them. On this I took out my knife, and picked at one of the doors, which to my great surprise I found to work to and fro, as on hinges. It was composed of a thick substance of web, and of a circular form. When I had satisfied my curiosity thus far, I told them we would withdraw a little and observe their motions. After waiting some time, one began to open his door half way; his neighbour followed him, then another, and so on, till many threw them quite back

and came out. As we were wondering at their cautious sagacity, our dog Rover got sight of them, and drove the whole town presently to close quarters, and prevented our further observation at that time.

As old Nunez was out on the hill, which was his constant morning walk, he thought he discovered some canoes at a distance to the westward, and came down to inform us. Upon this I took my glass, and went up with Bell. We soon perceived two canoes.

“These,” said I, “are our new boats, I will venture any wager; so let us prepare a repast for our friends against they come in.”

In about an hour we observed them come round the Key, and I could plainly perceive ten people. I desired Bell to get our boat ready, that we might go and meet them; which he did, and we came up to them in the bay. When within hearing, I hailed them, and they answered, “Amigos.” We then put off before them up the lagoon, and they all came on shore, being Gatta-loon, Gaynosanto, and eight other Indians, who most of them had been at our place before. We welcomed them in our usual manner, and Gatta-loon told me those were the two canoes, which they had made for my use. They likewise brought us four beef hides, matting, cotton pieces for our women, some cocoas and coffee seeds, and other things. The canoes were eighteen feet long, and two and a half feet by the beam, as I may term it, and would carry eight men each with ease. I presented each of them with a small looking-glass, and some of our remaining Dutch cloth, which was but of little value, it had been so injured by the moth and time. Bell paid fifty dollars into the hands of Gatta-loon, desiring they would never discover how they came by them to the Spa-

niards, or to mention that they had found them as we had done. All this they promised to observe strictly, and we doubted not their integrity, having had the experience of so many years of their unshaken fidelity.

Gatta-loon asked Nunez how he liked his situation? The old man said he had not enjoyed so much ease and quiet for many years past. He then inquired the same of Soroteet. His answer was, that he thought the Agago (or, as they translated it, the killing spirit) had never found the way to our place, or had never heard of it; saying, that Manoluvy or Manoluby was always among us whenever they came, which they might see by the laughing in our faces at all times. By this word they mean general amity or concord.

In about three days after our little business was settled, they took their leave to return home overland, having brought arms with them for that purpose. They said when they left us, that there was a vessel cast away about half a day's paddling from their place, more to the west. We asked them of what people; but they could give us no satisfaction, saying they saw none of the men dead or alive; and that she was all to pieces; had a white bottom, one mast, and some great guns. From which we judged that it might probably be the fair trader that had so lately visited us, as the description answered exactly.

CHAPTER XXXI.

NINETEENTH YEAR OF MY RESIDENCE.

NOTHING remarkable happened from the time the Indians left us, which was about the latter end of March; but some few days after their departure, Harry told me that he had got a great secret from Soroteet to tell me.

"What may that be?" said I.

He told me that Gatta-loon had informed Soroteet when last here, that we were known to be on this coast by the Spaniards. I began to be much alarmed, and immediately called Bell. I then desired Harry to repeat all he had heard or knew, whether good or bad, for I must confess it had much discomposed me; but on reflection, knowing it to be a thing that must one day happen, I began to be more calm.

He said that Gatta-loon had told Soroteet the affair, because he knew he could neither speak Spanish nor English, and therefore it could not well be divulged to me whilst they were with us, lest we should take it ill, and attribute the discovery to their treachery; they, however, desired we would not entertain so bad a thought of them. Their friends who were dead had pledged their hearts with us, and we should find them equally faithful on all occasions. They had no knowledge by what means we had been discovered, but that a couple of Spaniards from Maracaibo had lately been among them, and inquired if there were not two Englishmen married among their people, and settled

somewhere along the shore, to the northward. Finding we were known to be there, they thought it wrong to deny they had some knowledge of us, and confessed they knew a poor man, who told them he had been driven on that shore in a boat alone; that I had been there many long moons before they had found me out; and mentioned the circumstance, that one of their canoes had been driven on shore where I resided; that I had given every assistance in my power to the Indians in distress, and by means of this communication had obtained an Indian wife. That I was a good man, and liked to live there with my family; but that I would have endeavoured to find out the Spaniards, had I not been fearful they would have sent me to the mines, as an enemy of their nation. But that I was so far from being an enemy to mankind, or to them, that I had since my landing there, given my best assistance to two or three distressed Spanish vessels; and that they had often heard me say, that if I was once assured they would do me no injury, I should be content to die there in peace. In regard to the man who lived with me, he had been cast away long since, and came among them, but hearing of me, had travelled to find me out, and had got a wife of their nation. That we lived by fishing, and were very harmless and inoffensive men.

“ Well,” said one of them, who was an old man, and whose name was Perez, “ when you see them again, you may inform them that they may make themselves perfectly easy on our account; their condition is by no means to be envied, and we shall never molest them. If they are content to be voluntary anchorites, they are not likely to be disturbed. I suppose they are not good Catholics.”

They told him we were ; that we prayed to the book and cross often. To this he answered, "star bon." They inquired how far it was from where they lived ? They said about seven days' distance ; and here the conversation respecting us finished.

I said we felt grateful in our hearts for their good conduct ; but how the Spaniards came by the knowledge of us we could not divine, except it was from our good friends the fair traders, who might have been wrecked near their settlement, or from old Organ's people. However it might be, we were now made quite easy in our minds, knowing the disposition of the Spaniards towards us, by the conversation which had passed, that they would not give themselves the trouble to seek us, as we were of no consequence to them, either for good or ill.

One day Nunez and Harry came in from fishing, they brought home in the canoe from the Bird Key a part of some animal substance, in long round shapes, of a brown hue, exceeding smooth, and of a consistency like soft gristle. I asked Harry what it was ? and he gave me the following account, which I thought odd enough. The old man continued chattering to Bell in Spanish the whole time. Harry began thus : he said he got out of the canoe, and was wading among the rocks after one of those kind of fish called a cuckold ; he had his maschut in his hand ; all of a sudden he felt something clasp him round his leg, clinging very fast. On looking down he saw a monstrous lancksa, as he called it. He directly desired Nunez to come to his assistance, who by cutting and dividing it with his knife and maschut together, got him free, and that he had brought home a part of it to shew me. He said he would roast and eat it, which he did. The description

he gave of this animal is perfectly romantic to me. However, as I have not seen it myself, I must beg the reader to be satisfied with Mr. Harry's account of it, which is as follows.

He says they are not very frequent, especially of this large sort; but there are three kinds of less magnitude; that they are always found adhering to the side of a rock, or large stone, in some place where there may be an eddy, or current of water; that they expand forth several arms, which are continually playing about in the water; and that at the end of each of these is a kind of mouth, with which it catches all kinds of little live things, such as marine insects, &c.; that these arms convey what they have so taken into one great mouth it has in the centre of its body; that it has no eyes, nor can it remove from the place where it is fixed; but should any part of it be torn, or cut away, the part so torn or separated will soon fix itself to some other place, and become a new and perfect lancksa, and act exactly in all things as that from which it was separated. They lay hold of every thing they can reach, and if the object be too large for them to take in, they will then suck the substance out of it, and let the husk or skin drop. This account I must confess appeared very wonderful to me. I give it exactly as I heard it from his mouth, and must leave it to the learned to determine to what class this being may belong, and whether it may not be that called the polypus.

Now I am on this subject, I must mention another kind, which in my opinion belongs to the same tribe of marine animals. We first saw them, when Somer and I were once to the westward, in a place among rocks, and ever under water. Through several holes in the

side of those rocks about four feet down, seemed to grow small tufts of flowers, somewhat resembling in shape our polyanthus, but of a pale rose colour, now and then tinged with yellow ; but on my running down a paddle to shove a bunch of them off, they would instantaneously retire into the rock. This first excited our attention ; and finding by repeated trials that it evaded all our art, Somer undertook to detach one of them, which projected forth from an angular corner, with an axe ; and to accomplish this he got out of the canoe, and knocked the piece off, which he put into my hand, and entered the canoe again ; then seating himself, began to beat it to pieces, and in a small cell we found a substance of a thin membranous sort ; but the parts which had expanded like so many flowers, had now lost their form. The whole was contracted, and as it were shapeless. Yet there seemed to be a small palpitation left, which shewed there was life in it. Many of those we had caused to retire, were now expanded again in full beauty ; but on offering to touch them, they incontinently withdrew themselves as before. This natural curiosity would have escaped my memory had not this adventure of Harry's revived the impression of it.

I shall here beg leave to mention some other circumstances of an extraordinary nature which have passed under my observation at different times. There is a kind of long thin grass growing in these regions, which, if you wave your hand or even a small switch over it, will instantly, as if animated, fall down flat, though the hand or switch has not approached within a foot of it. There is also a species of yam, which, when you find it spring above ground, if you fix a stick in any point or direction within the distance of three feet, will, in a short time, find its way to it ; and if you remove the

stick a short time before it has reached it, and fix it in any other direction, it will find its way round any impediment, and when it has met begin to climb up it.

There is likewise to be found on the sea beach a sort of vine, with a red stem about the thickness of a goose quill, with small leaves growing laterally, and at about the distance of two feet between each pair ; but what makes it remarkable is, when it has extended its stems as from one centre like a star, to the distance of about ten or twelve feet, it there takes root in the sand, and begins to shoot out branches as from a new centre, so that in some places the shore will be covered with them for fifty yards together ; and so strongly do these red tendrils hold in the sand, that on taking hold of one of them, you shall find them tough or turgid, like any ship's stem fast. There are some kinds of flowers also, which have the quality of displaying their bloom after the sun is set, and keep in blossom the whole night, and when day comes on they all close again. On the contrary, others open with the rising sun, and close again when it sets.

The Indians have an idea that there is a particular sort of deer, that have ears in their feet, by which means they know that an enemy is approaching, even at a mile's distance, and further. When walking in the woods with Harry, he picked up the fore-leg bone of one of them, and shewed me a groove in the skin part, proceeding from the parting of the hoof, which he told me was the channel, or bed of the nerve, that enabled them to hear at so great a distance. This I consider an imagination only ; but that there does exist a species of deer that have the sense of hearing in greater perfection than others, may I think be admitted from Harry's observation.

There grows here a small tree, which bears a large fruit shaped something like a bell pear, but much larger, and flat on one side. It is full of soft thorny points, and of a dark green, inclining to purple towards the large end, which is of a full purple. Its pulp is white, spongy, and very full of juice, with many purple seeds within it. Its leaves are large. There is a small bird that feeds on the seeds of it, about the size of our English green-finck, and of that kind of green. Its bill resembles the parrot, and as the fruit varies from the green to the purple, so the bird changes its hue exactly, from its tail to the neck and head, which terminates in the purple; so that when the bird is actually on the limbs or fruit, you can hardly distinguish it, unless it moves or shifts its place.

From the contemplation of these wonders of nature, the mind naturally ascends with grateful reverence to the divine framer of them. “ O Lord ! How manifold are thy works ? In wisdom hast thou made them all ; the earth is full of thy riches ; so is the great and wide sea also.”

CHAPTER XXXII.

ABOUT the 10th day of August Harry's wife presented him with a daughter, and they gave her the name of Elizabeth, or Betty, in compliment to my wife. Harry observed on this occasion that Soroteet had not hitherto been re-named, according to our custom when any Indian joined our family. I turned to my friend Bell, and desired him to undertake the office of godfather, and give him one; and he thought proper to call him Rory, or Roderick. From this time we heard scarcely any other sound, for two or three days from Harry, Owen, and the other children, than *Rory! Rory! Rory!* so much would any simple novelty occupy their minds, which had never been enlarged by the hurry and varieties of the great world.

Harry would sometimes amuse himself by teaching the boys to swim, by taking them on his back in the lagoon. It happened one day as he and Rory were at their sport with the children, while Bell, Nunez, and myself, were looking on with our pipes in our mouths, Nunez suddenly called out "*un tiberoon*," or a shark. This soon drove them from the water, with not a little surprise, as we had never seen one so far up before. The Indians soon got bait and took her. This shark was not above six feet long, yet she had eight young ones, which would not leave her; so they were all taken; and though they were not more than eight or nine inches in length, yet were so strong, that it was with great difficulty a man could hold one of them in his hand with a strong gripe. It is

well known the shark brings forth her young after the manner of quadrupeds ; but it is a great mistake in those who assert that on any sudden danger she takes them into her mouth, or down her throat. The very contrary is the case ; for on any surprise they all secrete themselves in the womb ; and of this we had ocular demonstration, both now and at various other times.

The last time the Indians were here they brought with them a few pods of some exceeding large beans, of a full brown colour, having but two on each pod. These beans or kernels are about the size of a dollar, and of an excellent virtue for all complaints of the bowels, as they report. The mode of using them is to scrape a part of the kernel into warm water, or to stew them ; and so great is their efficacy, that the quantity of three or four grains will relieve the most racking cholic immediately. This we have ourselves experienced. They say it has likewise the power of expelling poison. I ordered a few of them to be planted, that we might not be without so easy and effectual a remedy.

One day Harry and Rory brought home with them a hawk's-bill tortoise, weighing about thirty pounds ; of whose shell our artificers in Europe make great use in divers kinds of ornaments. This kind of tortoise is not very agreeable to the taste. Of this animal I have seen at least seven sorts, viz.

1. The loggerhead tortoise. This kind is most frequent on our coast ; and some of them are so large as to weigh four hundred weight. They have a very round back, and are rather longer in proportion than the other kinds ; but there is no beauty in the shell.
2. The trunk tortoise is so called, I presume, from

their resemblance to an old coffer or trunk, being ridged. They grow large and rank, and are not agreeable to the taste.

3. The hawk's-bill; from the resemblance of its beak to that of a hawk.

4. The green tortoise. These are most coveted, and their flesh exceeds all the others in flavour. I have seen some of them at least three hundred weight.

5. There is another kind that never go into the sea, but frequent ponds and muddy places. They have a most hideous appearance to strangers. I have seen them above fifty pounds weight. When attacked they are very fierce, and make a hissing noise. If they once fix their teeth, they seldom quit their hold without bringing off the piece. They are black, rough, and have bright eyes, with circles of red, which give them a very formidable appearance. Yet the flesh of these animals is esteemed a great delicacy, being rich and palatable.

6. Another sort is of a diminutive size, and frequent ponds also. They are of no estimation except for the beauty of their back shell, which is generally yellow, bordered with black; or olive, bordered either with yellow or red.

7. There is another kind that never frequent the water, but keep up in the woods, and never grow to any size of more than three or four pounds weight. At a certain season of the year they retire below the surface of the earth, where they remain for the space of three months. All the several kinds lay eggs; and they have the peculiar property of retaining life for many hours after the head is separated from the body.

Upon this subject I have really been witness to such facts as I am fearful of relating, lest my veracity may

be called in question. One circumstance I will give. I remember the head of one of the loggerhead tortoises was cut off about ten in the morning, and thrown away by the head of the lagoon ; yet poor Eva (now dead and gone) happened to take it up on the next day in the evening ; and as she wantonly placed her finger within the mouth, it closed at once, and bit her so hard, that she was obliged to run and call out for assistance, nor was she relieved till Harry thrust a sharp instrument through the brain.

We had not explored our back territories since the accident of the fire. Bell therefore proposed that he and Harry should make an excursion ; for which purpose they furnished themselves with arms, ammunition, and provisions. They entered the woods, or rather what had been the woods, early in the morning. They took three dogs with them, and did not return till about six in the evening. To my great surprise, they brought home with them two small black pigs ; but had lost one of the dogs. They related the following story.

They said on their first setting out they found all the underwood burnt for the distance of a mile or more. Harry was the pilot, and steered his course towards the place where we found those huge bones. They then mounted the bank, and proceeded south about half a mile, when they came to a wood of fine tall trees, where they sat down and refreshed themselves. At a small distance from this, they came to a large savannah, which lay low, with here and there a single tree growing. On their entering the savannah, they saw some black creatures running swiftly through the grass. They kept on their course directly for a large tree, at the distance of about two hundred yards. As they

drew near the tree, Bell plainly discovered some of the same animals. He took good aim, and shot one so as to cripple it. On their coming up, to their surprise, they found it to be a young pig, of about seven weeks old as he judged. No sooner did he take hold of it, than it began to cry lustily. Soon after which he plainly heard the grunting or growling of hogs, as when they are enraged, and a great rushing noise through the grass. On which Harry immediately ascended the tree, and desired Bell to follow his example; but before he could get his arms around it, a huge brown boar came furiously towards him. What to do he could not at first determine, but slipped on the other side of the tree, and began to load his piece as fast as he possibly could, keeping his eye stedfastly on the beast, and dodging round. Now and then the boar would make directly at him, champing his long tusks, with his mouth all in a white foam. In this dreadful situation he was just making ready to fire at him, when Harry discharged his piece from the tree, and took him directly in the ear, which at once laid him motionless, and delivered poor Bell from his perilous condition. Harry then came down, loaded afresh, and desired Bell to follow him, as he had perceived others from the tree. They soon came in view of the sow with several young ones. They both fired on them, and Bell killed one. The old sow and the rest took away through the grass with great expedition. They declined the pursuit, and returned to the tree to take a survey of the old signior. Bell said he had never before seen one of such magnitude. His tusks were at least eight inches in length, and about the head and shoulders he was of monstrous thickness. This animal, in his fury, let out the entrails of one of the dogs in a moment, by whose death per-

haps the life of Bell was saved, as it gave him time to evade his attack.

The next day we sent off Harry and Rory to bring home a part of the boar, together with his tusks ; but they returned with the tusks only, as the carcase had been almost entirely devoured by the tigers, or by some of their own species, which circumstance the Indians say is by no means uncommon. They likewise relate, that when a wild boar is wounded, if he can get off, he seeks out a particular kind of tree, and fretting its bark with his teeth and tusks, he causes the sap to flow, with which he anoints his wound, by rubbing against it, and by this means he recovers. They believed they were very numerous in this quarter by the dung they saw, and that they found food in the savannah by rooting up the ground, and eating a kind of long nut which fell from the tall trees, somewhat resembling our acorn. What could be the cause I know not, but during the whole time of my residence at this place, I had never seen one of those animals even in the neighbourhood ; but perhaps the food they are most fond of grows in parts more remote from the shore. Bell said he believed the boar did not weigh less than two hundred weight. The two young ones, we barbecued, and we found them delicious.

The next piece of business we went upon was to make masts and sails for our new canoes. As to their sails we were obliged to be sparing, having no great stock of that article by us. As we had not been once out in them since the Indians had left them with us, we determined to make a small voyage in them to the north eastward. Accordingly, Bell and I, with Owen, one morning put out of the lagoon in one of them, to which Bell gave the name of the Gannet, and the other, which

I called the Komaloot, was manned by Nunez and Rory. We stood away for the old plantation ; where I visited the grounds I had not seen for a long time, except from the shore, when we brought away the goods we purchased of the Killicranky man. I went into my old cave, from thence to the part I had set fire to so long ago. It was now become, as it were, a new forest of young saplings and bushes. The sight of these scenes recalled to my remembrance the incident of my first landing on this shore. I visited the cave as my early asylum, with a grateful and fond affection ; and with sensations somewhat similar to those which accompany us to places where we have passed our years of childhood,—each step was interesting, and every object brought with it the remembrance of some event which made it dear to me.

As we were on the return, Bell called to me to come to him. I did, and he shewed me one of the most noble calabash trees I ever beheld. As it is a tree of a peculiar growth, I will endeavour to describe it. In height and size it resembles our codling tree, but the limbs, or rather the superior branches, grow horizontally from the tree, very straight, and have but few small leaves, which grow in pairs opposite to each other, with a pair at the extremity of each bough or branch. Its fruit is somewhat more remarkable ; it grows to the magnitude of a small bomb-shell, is of a pale green, and full of snow-white pith ; you will see one of them protrude from the very extremity of a limb, so that by means of its great weight the bough shall bend down to the ground. On another limb, they may be seen to push from the side, sometimes in a small crevice between two limbs, by which means they become distorted, being cramped in their

growth ; but whatever obstruction they may meet with, it will not diminish them in quantity, as they will push their protuberances wherever they find room ; and sometimes you shall see them not above a foot from the root of the tree. The stem of this fruit is so short and slender, that to a stranger they appear fungus excrescences rather than fruit.

After we had been here about an hour, and I had shewn my two friends all about my first habitation, we took boat again, and proceeded to Tower's Field, where landing, we made our dinner, after which Bell took his gun, and went with Owen and Rory, who was but lately acquainted with fire arms. While they were gone I took Nunez to shew him the large stone which I had discovered among the woods. He supposed it to have been erected by Columbus, or some of the first adventurers, as a memorial of their landing here. I bid him consider that it required the force and joint labour of more than one thousand men to move such a mass of rock. However, he still was of the same opinion, adding that the natives might have assisted, as providence had thought fit to lead them to this shore for the purpose of preaching the gospel among the savages. As the old man seemed to be thoroughly persuaded that he was right in his conjecture, I was unwilling to disturb him by any remonstrance to the contrary. He was at no time contentious, and it gave me some pleasure to yield to an opinion from which he derived so much satisfaction.

When we got back to the water side we observed our people run backward and forward often, and then fire, on a part of the beach near Whale Point. We could not conceive the meaning of this. In about an hour they returned, and Bell told us they had sur-

prised three seals asleep, between some rocks, and that Owen had shot one of them with my piece, but as he had but slightly wounded it, the animal had escaped from them, notwithstanding they had endeavoured to intercept him before he reached the sea, and pelted him with stones.

"Ay," said Nunez, "if you had but given him a small stroke over the nose with the butt end of your piece, you would soon have finished him."

We now began to think it time to return, and put off accordingly; but just as I was stepping into the canoe, I picked up a small kind of cockle shell of a fine crimson colour, from the bottom of which, and on the inside, grew up a beautiful branch of white coral, of a texture smooth as glass, and resembling the horns of a stag; in length about four inches; at the extreme points were small studs, resembling so many stars of a bright blue.

"This," said I to Bell, "is a great curiosity indeed, and would in Europe bring a great price." I have it still by me, with a great variety of other curious articles, but whether or not they may ever reach my own country, is beyond even my conjecture. We got home safe, without any thing more occurring worth notice, and found all well.

We had not been home long before I observed Harry strutting about at a distance, with an air of great importance, dressed in a shirt of mine, my old tiger jacket, a beaver hat, and maschut by his side, affecting the air and manner of a Spaniard. The women were all the time tittering and laughing at him. I pointed him out to Bell, and then called him to come to me, which he did slowly, and with dignity. Bell held his hand out to him; he retreated a few

paces, then placing his hand on his hip, with one foot advanced, and said, "me grande cavalero." Nunez burst into laughter.

"Pray, Mr. Harry," said I, "what is the meaning of all this?"

"Ha!" he replied, "me be rich man as well as yourself now, and will buy me a watch talker too, when Killicranky comes here again." He now shewed his two hands full of doubloons, which greatly surprised us.

"Where, in the name of wonder, did you get those?" said I.

"From dead man's hole," he replied, "all along side."

"How can that be? I thought we had sufficiently examined that place long ago."

"Come see," said he; and away we went. He ran before us, and when he came to the place held up a large cup, which, when Bell took it into his hands, contained about twenty more doubloons. On scraping the vessel, we found it to be pure gold, weighing about twenty or twenty-two ounces. The fact was, that the late heavy rains had washed off the soil, and as he chanced to be there picking a few limes he discovered the brim of the cup rising above the side of the old hole, and got it out with ease a few hours before our return.

"Well, Don Henriquez," said I, "you have the weather gage of us in this discovery, I must confess; and pray what do you intend to make of your riches?"

He said, affecting to speak after our manner on several occasions, "what is mine is yours, my good friends."

We returned him our thanks for his generous confidence, and placed the prize in our treasury, agreeably to his desire.

Soon after this we discovered a sail lying to, right off our place. This was about the 19th of March; and in the morning I got my glass, and saw she was a large schooner. Bell proposed to speak her. I objected, as she was at least two leagues out; "yet," said I, "if you are inclined to adventure, you and Nunez may take Harry with you, and go out in the yawl and shew yourselves. We know the Spaniards are acquainted with our residence in this place, therefore we need be under no great apprehensions on that account; the wind you see is favourable."

Upon this they soon made up their minds, and off they went, with a few dollars, a parcel of yams, &c. They had not got far out in the bay, when I perceived a white jack hoisted, and the schooner stood for them. I knew if they continued on that tack long they would certainly run on a ledge of rocks. In a short time they hove to again, and lay by for the boat, which was very soon alongside. Well, thought I, this may be another fair trader; we shall see what will come of it. I kept on the hill constantly, until they had been on board more than an hour, when I saw them put off with another boat in company. This I was not much pleased with; however my mind was soon at rest, as I saw them part company, and row away for the point of Long Key, in order, as I supposed, to get water. Bell and his companions soon arrived. He told me it was a guarda costa, of ten guns, from Carthagena, and that the crew were a strange medley of mortals, composed of all the various dips, or casts, from the Spaniard down to the Indian and Negro. What we took for

the white flag was nothing more than the ragged staves, in form of St. Andrew's cross ; that the commander's name was Zayas ; and that he found among them an old foul loon, his countryman, one Watty M'Clintock, who had turned papist, and had been with them from the time of Admiral Vernon's being on the coast, from whose fleet he had deserted. He said, that having observed in M'Clintock's hand exactly such a knife as we had purchased from the fair traders, he interrogated him, by what means he had obtained it ? He answered somewhat archly, that he had found it before it was lost, on a Maroon key some months ago ; that their people had more of them.

Bell said, "they are English ; has any vessel of that nation been cast away lately ?"

"No," said he, "not that I know of ; but you must understand there are several vessels from the north that belong to the English colonies, and by some fatality or other are driven from their way, and as they know we are out on the watch, they leave now and then a few trifles on the keys or other places, that they may not be disturbed while they take a little fresh water or so."

I soon began to comprehend the meaning of this, and said no more on the subject. I asked Bell if they had any thing on board that might be useful to us ?

"Not a thing," said he, "they look more like a gang of thieves than any thing else. The only article I could obtain was a good whetstone or two of the lieutenant, in return for a few yams and potatoes."

Soon after this we saw them stretching out to seaward, and before night lost sight of them, which ended this adventure.

About this time Bell and Nunez contrived a kind of

board to amuse themselves at a game called draughts, at which they would sit for hours, with segars in their mouths, without speaking a word, but wholly intent on the game. I was frequently invited to join them in this amusement, but it was too silent and sedentary for the activity of my disposition.

Harry in his different excursions often brought me home natural curiosities, which he knew would please me. A few days after the departure of the guarda costa he brought me a very curious marine plant growing to a large stone about ten pounds weight. It was as black as jet, and so hard that a knife would hardly penetrate it. It was in height about the size of a cabbage. It was extremely curious to observe the multitude of its small fibres, or twigs, as minute and slender as horse hair, and shining much like it. There was not the least appearance of any thing like leaves. Its growth was somewhat in the form of a cypress tree, with its root so firmly connected with the stone, that the eye could not discover where it was joined to it. He frequently brought me sponges and sea fans or feathers, of great variety of colours; the sponges often in the forms of cups, tubes, roses, &c.

I must not omit to mention in this place a tree of coral now hanging over the entrance of our cave. This curious production came up with our killick, as we were fishing. It is white as snow, full of small stars, and branching forth like the horns of a stag or elk. It is of so solid a texture, that when struck it sounds like a bell. Towards the root it is as thick as the small of a man's leg, and in height five feet and upwards, and weighs at least fifty pounds.

The remora, or sucking-fish, has been so often described that I need not mention it, only to note, that

we have the skin of one of those singular fish, which measures at least three feet.

We have a bird here about the size of our starling, black, grey, and white. This sweet creature has obtained from us the name of the charmer. Its daily practice is to repair every morning at sun-rise to the highest branch of some dead tree, and there hold forth its melody for the space of an hour. This song is constantly repeated in the evening, when that blessed luminary is sinking in the west. Its notes are so loud and various, that we hear it with continued delight that never cloys. We are so charmed with this bird that its life is held sacred, and it is never disturbed or molested by any of my family.

We have another bird much of the same colour and size, but with a somewhat of a larger head. It is so inveterate an enemy to the eagle, that whenever the latter is seen to ascend, it will at once mount after it, and continues to worry it in such a manner, by beating it on the head, that the eagle is obliged to escape from it by leaving the quarter. This bird we call the little hero. It is extremely curious to observe what pains the eagle takes to avoid it, now mounting aloft, then darting with the greatest rapidity towards the earth ; but the little hero still keeps close behind his head, and will not quit him. It is equally an enemy to the fish-hawk, and other birds of prey. It will sit for hours on the upper branch of the tree on the look out, every now and then flying up perpendicularly, and then, if it discovers nothing, returns to the same branch.

CHAPTER XXXIII.

TWENTIETH YEAR OF MY RESIDENCE.

By this time Owen, Harry, and Rory, had been busy at the pirates' pit or reservoir, in the hopes of discovering more treasure, having extended the diameter of the hole to the breadth of ten feet at least; but as yet their labours met with no success. Early one morning Rory came down the hill to me, as I was sitting within the cave, and said in his broken English "no friends come over Long Key now; long smoke fire make."

"What, is the Key vanished then in the night?" said I to him.

Finding I did not understand his meaning he went out to Harry. I overheard him say that he saw people. This was said in the Indian tongue. I called Harry in, and desired to know what Rory had told him.

"He said," replied Harry, "that there are people on the Key, with a great fire, and that they are not our friends."

"Call the white men, then," said I; and taking my glass, away I marched up the hill. My family were soon at my heels. When we were on the cliff we perceived ten or twelve persons round a large fire, about an hundred yards from the old well, but could see neither canoe, boat, or vessel of any kind. That they were Indians we knew, as none appeared to have any covering on the head. Many conjectures were

started, but no absolute certainty whether they were enemies or friends ; but we were induced to consider them as the former, as, though at so great a distance, yet by many of their actions they did not appear to Harry and Rory to be of their tribe.

" Well," said I, " lads, are you willing to go out and speak with them ? "

They drew back. Harry said, they might be some of the Sancoodas, and they would soon enough roast him if they caught him. At the word Sancoodas, old Nunez, lifting up his hands, said, " le diabola per los Sancoodas ;" and desired that our fire might be put out, shewing great signs of fear.

" Who are those you call Sancoodas ? " said I.

Nunez told me they were the same whom we call Moskeetos, the most inveterate enemies to all Spaniards, and he was certain if they came amongst us they would soon put him out of pain.

" If that be the case," I replied, " it shall never be said we gave them an invitation," and immediately ordered the fire to be extinguished. Neither Harry, Nunez, nor any of the Indians would venture up the hill after this. Therefore it fell to Bell's lot and mine to keep the necessary look out. When we took the second observation, which was about noon, we saw them all busy at a dance, as we judged by their actions. About two hours after, they all retired behind the trees on the south side, and in a short time after we saw them all paddling away south in four canoes ; and thus they left our territories, to the great joy of my family. Of what tribe they were, what brought them there, and whither they were bound, we could not conjecture. This happened about the last day of July.

I now hinted to Bell that it might be useful, if we were to make a kind of sketch or draught of our harbour, as we knew full well all the bearings and distances, by long and frequent observation. About the middle of December, in a morning, as he and I were out in the bay, for the above purpose of making a chart of the islands and coast, I observed that our signal was out at home. This hurried us back, and we made at once for the lagoon. When we arrived, we were met at the landing-place by Owen, who informed us that four friends from overland were come to visit us, and that the women were all crying about the Spaniards. What to make of this we knew not, and hurried away to our habitation, where we found them all huddled together, as in consultation. We found they were old acquaintances, and saluted them in a most friendly manner; but my impatience was so great that I desired Harry would at once tell me the cause of this sad wailing, whatever it might be. The account he gave me was this: that Gaynosanto, one of the Indians, informed them, they were sent off by the old men at home, to give us timely notice that some Spaniards had been to visit them about ten days past, and said they were ordered strictly to inquire among them concerning some English people who were settled some where on the coast, and had much money among them. On which account they were suspected to be pirates; and the commandant looked to them (the Indians) for information, as he had reason to think they were well acquainted with them and their place of residence.

I must confess I was not much surprised at this news, as it was what I had long expected; but my friends Nunez and Bell were under the greatest apprehensions. I requested them to inform me by what means

the Spaniards had discovered us, and if their people had acknowledged their connection with us. They said, when they found we were discovered they thought it would be wrong not to confess their knowledge of us; but that they were always true men to us, and did not know by what means the Spaniards had obtained this information. This was delivered in so plain and honest a manner, that I had no doubt of their fidelity; and I judged, with reason, that the guarda costa must have been the sole cause. I now desired to know if the Spaniards had informed them when they intended to pay us a visit. They said in about two moons, as they learned from their old people; and that they were ordered to do us good if we wanted assistance. I thanked them, and bid them inform our kind friends, on their return, that as I was conscious I had given offence to no one, I was resolved to stand upon my innocence, and not involve them in any difficulties in my defence. That I did not think any persons, particularly such as called themselves Christians, would be barbarous enough to molest a man in my forlorn condition.

The Indians stayed with us but two days, and then took their leave. We promised to send them intelligence by Harry and Rory how matters went on with us, if we received the promised visit from the Spaniards; and if not, we would still contrive to acquaint them with our situation. We then parted with them--perhaps for ever!

Matters now began to wear a new face with us. My dwelling was no longer the residence of peaceful tranquillity. A general restlessness and confusion seemed to reign throughout. I was resolved to be firm and resolute, and to steer with my helm a-mid-

ships, relying on Providence, which had hitherto protected me, knowing that a sparrow cannot fall without the knowledge and permission of God.

To add to my uneasiness, my friends Bell and Nunez are come to a resolution not to await the arrival of the Spaniards, but to remove to some distance, till they shall know the result of this intended visit, and to return to us, if they find things go on well; but I fear I shall see poor Nunez no more, as he seems to fall off daily, and is now a very aged man.

I have been with Bell to see the place he has fixed on for his retreat. It is not more than half a mile back from our residence, near a small pond of water, and under a bank shaded with thick trees; where they have cleared a small square, to erect posts or uprights which they intend to thatch in the best manner they can, and to retire there, with a few of our articles, till the enemy shall have entirely left our place. I have proposed likewise to convey our money and other valuables, with my Bible and my Journal, to this retreat; as there are circumstances in the latter I would by no means wish them to be acquainted with. We intend to contrive a box, and nail them up in it, then pay the outside with tar, to prevent the worms or ants from penetrating it, and by digging a small cell in the bank at the back of the house, there to deposit them in safety.

Notwithstanding the fortitude with which I had supported myself for so many years, I must confess that at times all my resolution failed. I began to accuse myself of having spent my time unprofitably to mankind, by thus suffering myself to be shut up in this remote corner of the world, in a kind of voluntary exile. I recollect that the Dutchmen had in-

vited me to leave this desolate place, so had old Organ. My remaining here was therefore a matter of choice. On the other hand, in cooler moments, when judgment and discretion bore sway, I considered the cruelty of deserting those who had every dear and tender claim to my assistance and protection; and to what purpose?—To plunge again into the vortex of the world; to be the sport of contending passions; to hazard my temporal health, and my eternal happiness. Here I had every enjoyment that a rational man could wish for. My wants were few, and those easily supplied. I had a happy family around me. I lived in patriarchal simplicity. I was lord of the domain, and my subjects paid me willing obedience. My authority was never questioned, because it was never exerted but for the general benefit; and thus my days passed in a happy and peaceful tranquillity, undisturbed by those anxious solicitudes which attend a life of business or of pleasure in the great world. Upon the whole, if Heaven shall so permit, I prefer spending the remainder of my life in this blessed retreat, among those whom I love, and by whom I am beloved again with sincere and undisguised affection.

As the Spaniards have, in a degree, been informed of our riches, at least that we have money amongst us, this will be a powerful motive to their visiting our habitation. We have concluded, therefore, that it may be better to produce a part of our cash, as the surest means of preserving the rest; as they never can suspect our stock to be any thing like that which accident has thrown in our way. My son Owen is made acquainted with our intentions, and particularly of my resolution to deposit this my Journal in a safe and secret place, where it may neither be injured nor discovered.

Should any accident happen to me, perhaps he may one day find means of conveying it to my native country, either by himself, or some other safe hand. I flatter myself the detail of my life, however barren of incident, will not be wholly uninteresting or useless. It may shew the world how necessary it is to place our chief dependence on Providence, but to neglect no means of providing for our own safety and comfort. The first will teach us acquiescence and resignation to His will, in whatever situation we may be placed ; the latter, that it is our duty to exert ourselves with becoming fortitude, and not to expect the interposition of Heaven, when by human means we can extricate ourselves from the difficulties with which we are surrounded. In exhibiting the picture of my life in this distant and solitary region, it will be found that my time did not pass away altogether in shapeless idleness ; that my mind was improved and purified in my retirement ; and I bless God for the opportunity he has given me of correcting my wandering thoughts, and leading me to the contemplation of his divine perfections, by abstracting my attention from worldly or sensual objects ; and thus converting what I considered as the severest misfortune that could happen to me, to the greatest blessing. If Providence shall so order it, that I remain where I am unmolested, I shall continue my narrative as long as my strength and materials last.

My twentieth year has almost run out. The Spaniards have not yet made their appearance ; nor for some time have we heard any thing of our friends the Indians, which we much wonder at, and have formed various conjectures on the occasion. My two friends have at length returned to live at my habitation as

usual. Yet, as it suits their fancy, they now and then sleep at their new hut. Old Nunez frequently retired there to rest himself in the heat of the day, and returned in the evening. We little dreamed how soon this peaceful arrangement was to end. Yesterday, as he did not come back at the usual time, we began to be uneasy at his absence, and Bell went in search of him. He found him in the hut lying on his left side, and supposing him to be asleep, endeavoured to awaken him, but he was quite dead. When he brought us this melancholy news, we were much affected. He had endeared himself to us by many kind offices, and a most affectionate regard and fidelity. My family gave signs of the most tender, though unavailing sorrow. I gave orders that the corpse should be watched during the night, and on the morrow prepared for the funeral.

CHAPTER XXXIV.

TWENTY-FIRST YEAR OF MY RESIDENCE.

I now entered upon my twenty-first year. We buried poor old Nunez in the grave among the rest of our departed friends, in as decent a manner as our situation and circumstances would admit. Bell and I now held a consultation, the result of which was, that it would be proper, in order to put an end to any further suspense, to send Harry and Rory on a visit to our old friends the Indians, to gain what intelligence they could respecting the Spaniards, and other matters. The next day we acquainted them with our opinion,

and they immediately gave into the scheme. I advised them by all means to go alone, without their wives, as the motive of the present journey would urge them to use all the dispatch possible. They approved of this proposal, saying, they had full reliance on our care and tenderness towards their families during their absence. They set off the next day, properly equipped for their journey. We had given them the best advice in our power, as to the regulation of their conduct, and wished them to make all the dispatch possible.

About four days after they left us, we met with a sad disaster. In the morning Bell and Owen took their guns to go after some flamingoes. As they went in a canoe, I desired them to stop in their return at the old plantation, and bring home with them some of the large calabashes, as our women wanted to use them. In about two hours I was very much alarmed with the sound of a conch, which, from the manner, I knew to be Bell's. We immediately ran down to the lagoon, and I stepped into the Indian canoe ; but I had not gone far when I discovered our boat on the return with Bell only in it, paddling away with all expedition. Not seeing my son, I was fearful something very dreadful had happened. The moment he turned the point I hailed him. He did not answer, but continued to paddle still faster. When he came near I discovered Owen lying on his back in the boat.

“Good God!” said I, “messmate, what is the matter? Tell me at once, I beseech you.”

“Don't alarm yourself,” said he ; “your son has met with a misfortune ; he has broken the small-bone of his leg, but I hope all will be soon well again. All that we have to do now is to get him home as soon as

possible, and then see what we can best do to relieve him."

We soon got him to the landing-place; but how to transport him to our habitation was the question. I sounded a shell. The women came running down; and when they heard of Owen's accident, they were all lamentation, and became for a time perfectly unmanageable; but as all this confusion only increased our difficulties, I told them no time was to be lost; and having brought them to their proper senses, I ordered them to bring from the kitchen a flat board. On this we laid him, poor fellow! (who was all patience, though in a great agony) and carried him as easy as possible. We found it was the right leg, and about three inches above the ankle. It was swelled to a great degree. He bore the pain with a resolution much beyond our expectation. It was happy for us that we had a person of Bell's judgment and skill. We therefore submitted the patient entirely to his direction. He set the leg with much dexterity; and having swathed it up, had a contrivance to prevent its moving, so as to receive no further injury. We now began to inquire how this accident happened, and received the following account. As they were running along-shore Owen spied a monkey, and they put in to get a shot at it; as he ran with his piece cocked in his hand, his leg unfortunately slipped into a kind of crab-hole, and receiving a sudden jerk, it snapped at once. We fixed his resting-place just within the front of our dwelling, and put a small awning over his head to shade him from the morning sun, so that here he sat in state as it were. I cannot omit, in this place, to express my gratitude to my friend Bell for his con-

stant care and attention to him. He was anxious even to provide him with amusement, to make him pass his time more contentedly, and as much as possible beguile him of his pain. He would often sit by him for hours together, playing on his flute, in order to divert him. In short, I cannot say too much of his kindness. It was felt by us all; but poor Owen's gratitude knew no bounds. He made every affectionate return in his power. He looked up to him as his friend, his benefactor, his preserver, his second father; and my worthy friend was a sharer in the happiness which he thus distributed around him.

Our young men had been gone above a fortnight, when one evening as we were sitting together, relating former transactions, the night being fair and clear, on a sudden we heard such an explosion as terrified us greatly. At the same moment, my little child America cried, "Look, look." Upon which we saw in the air a number of small globes of blue fire, as they were vanishing one after the other. Bell said he had often seen such a meteor before; but we had none of us heard so loud an explosion. I myself had seen them, but not accompanied by such a report. The effect it produced upon us was, that it sent us all to our dormitories without further ceremony.

As we retired to rest, my wife observed to me that she did not like to see those fire-balls at all. I asked her the reason. She said she was sure we should have much sickness among us soon. I laughed at her, bid her go to sleep and forget it.

"No, no," she said, "all old men said so where I came from."

The next morning, the first thing I saw was one of our dogs called Sleeper, which had gone with Harry

and Rory, running down the hill. Soon after came the lads themselves, as we thought ; but as they drew nigh I discovered that one was not Rory, but an Indian, who was a stranger to us. I grew quite impatient, and hailed Harry, desiring him to inform me what news, and what was become of Rory ? By this time all our family were collected, and as I found Harry did not seem willing to answer my question, I spoke to him again, called him brother Harry, and begged him to inform me concerning Rory, and why he was not with them ? Upon this he came up to me, took me by the hand, and said, looking tenderly in my face, " I know you have a great heart ; you will not cry like women, if I tell you poor Rory is dead behind with my people, and many more good friends too."

I begged him to be brief, and give me a true relation of all that had happened since his departure. I observed Rory's wife was absent, which I was glad of. He said they made their journey without any accident, in four days and nights. On their first arrival they met a woman who told them all their people were sick of the flux, and many dying every day, amongst whom was Futee, and several others who had been on visits to our place. That two days after their arrival Rory fell sick, and lived but three days ; after which a few Indians came to him, and said they would take good care to bury our friend ; but that he must return back again as soon as possible, lest he should die too. He said they had advised young Sappash to accompany him, and that when he came home, they desired he would tell their good friends, meaning us, that according to their custom, they had provided Sappash as a husband for Jessy at once, as they were all too sick to hear any complaints from women on that subject ; and that as

for the Spaniards they had heard nothing more of them concerning us.

When Harry had thus satisfied Bell and me as to all that had happened, I sent for Jessy. When she came, I desired her to attend particularly to what I was going to say to her. She said she would. I then told her that her people had thought proper to keep her husband among them, for great reasons of their own, and that they had sent this young man to be her husband in his stead. I thought proper to acquaint her with their resolution, and to wait her consent. She seemed much affected with what I told her, and quite incapable of answering. I judged upon the whole it might be better to be more explicit. Therefore, after some little preparation, I told her the Great One, whom she had heard me talk so much about, had been pleased to lay Soroteet in the ground; and as that young man, Sappash, was sent by her friends, out of their love to her and me, I hoped, for their sakes and mine, she would make up her mind to oblige both. She moved off, without uttering a word, and went weeping to my wife, to whom she related what had passed, and expressed all her sorrows on account of poor Soroteet's death, for whom she had a very sincere affection, and her reluctance to any other connection, if it might be avoided. This my wife informed me of, and I instructed her to use all her influence to persuade her to comply with our wishes. Thus matters remained for a few days; when my wife told me that Jessy had desired her to signify to me, that she was ready to be ruled by me in every thing; but that she hoped Sappash would look at my wife and me, and learn to love her as her first husband did. This she assured me was said with many tears; and Jessy's compliance was

given with a reserve and delicacy that raised her very high in the opinion of us all. The affair being brought to this issue, I sent for Harry, and desired him to inform the young stranger of Jessy's consent, and my intention to celebrate the wedding on the morrow.

Harry was much concerned for poor Owen's misfortune, and was very anxious to know whether he would ever again walk upright as before. I told him I hoped he would; but that Bell, who was his doctor, could give the best account.

"Ay, ay," said Bell, "he'll be taking till his legs ere lang again."

On the following day the ceremony was performed as usual. We did every thing we could to throw an air of cheerfulness over the whole; but poor Jessy's melancholy was not to be diverted from its object. She endeavoured, to the utmost of her power, to conceal her anguish, to appear cheerful, but she smiled through her tears, and was really a most interesting object, and excited the love and admiration of all.

The next day Harry requested to know what new name we should give to Jessy's husband. I told him Rory, as before. This pleased all, but particularly Jessy.

My wife desired me never to say Indians were fools again.

"Did I not tell you," said she, "that fire-balls made sick for my people?"

I told her the accident of such an accomplishment proved nothing. She must believe no such foolish tokens, except that the meteor might show the foul and unwholesome state of the air. There could be no connection between that and the sickness which had infected her people. She shook her head, and was not

inclined to alter her opinion. I sincerely lamented the sore afflictions with which my Indian friends had been visited; but as those events are in the hands of Him who governs the issues of life and death, it is our duty to submit, and not to murmur. We may, however, hope for more favourable tidings from them soon.

Things went on in the usual way for a considerable time. My son began to walk with his crutches freely. Bell confessed to me, that, though he had shown much dexterity and skill in setting Owen's leg, he was at that time very far from believing himself capable of such an operation, as he had never assisted but at one such before. However, he had given his whole attention to it, and by care and good luck he had happily succeeded.

Soon after our poor children fell sick of the flux. This created a general alarm in our little community, as we feared it might be equally fatal with that which had deprived us of so many of our Indian friends. My wife was at her prognostics again, and insisted that we should all die. This vexed me. I desired her to be silent, and keep her fears to herself, as she might otherwise, without intention, produce the event she feared, by increasing the apprehension of danger. She at once promised to obey me, as indeed she had been a tender, affectionate, and obedient wife, in every situation. In about a fortnight I had the pleasure to see them all recover, and gain strength daily.

Some time after this, Bell proposed an excursion by land to the northward, if agreeable to me. I told him, that for myself I had rather be excused; but that if Harry and he chose to go, they had my full consent. In the morning, therefore, they began their preparations; and whilst they were getting ready, I begged

Bell not to venture more than a few miles or so from home, which he promised. The morning following they took their departure, before we turned out. They had two dogs with them, and my small spy-glass.

In the evening Owen took a whim to go a-fishing with Rory down the lagoon. They set off about four o'clock, and I took my walk up the hill in order to look out, as was my custom. I had not been long there before I discovered two sail in the offing, and as I thought standing right in-shore. I eagerly clapped my glass to my eye, and perceived it to be really so. I knew not what to think of this; but as they seemed to stand in from a north-east quarter, I had doubts in my mind whether they were Spaniards or not. At first view I thought they were both sloops. They were then very far out; but on one of them jibbing her main-sail, she proved to be a schooner. In a short time it came up thick in the horizon, and I lost sight of them. I now returned home, and lighting my pipe, walked down to the landing-place. I waited with some impatience about an hour, when I saw Rory and Owen coming in from fishing. I told Owen what I had seen, and he wished that we should go up again. We did so, but as the night was coming on, and the horizon quite thick, we could perceive no more of them.

Seeing nothing of our travellers, we gave them up for the evening, and I sat smoking by my wife in deep meditation till midnight. I was up before sunrise, and on the look out, but not a sail could I perceive any where along the whole horizon; therefore who or what they were I could never learn, though at the time I entertained many conjectures concerning them. A sail was at all times to me an interesting object: it

seemed to be the link that united me to the civilized world which I had left, and, from a certain association of ideas, carried me back to my boyish days. In this mental retrospect I have indulged myself to such an excess of tenderness, that I have suddenly burst into tears, and been obliged to fly to some occupation to relieve the anguish of my mind.

The next day, towards the evening, our adventurers arrived, weary enough; and glad we all were to see them returned safe and well. They were almost famished with hunger. Our females soon prepared them a good supper, and we suffered them to retire to rest, without interrogations, seeing them so much fatigued.

On the morrow, Bell gave us the following brief account of their journey. After they had gone about five miles to the north-west, mostly through woods, they observed the land to rise gradually, and at length came to an open country. Here they sat down to refresh themselves. While they were thus employed they remarked at a small distance a tree of most enormous size, but quite hollow, and so large within the trunk, that he believed at least thirty men could find shelter there. From this tree they set forward again, and took a course to the north. The ground continuing to rise, till they came to a small wood of lofty trees. Harry mounted one of them, in order to take a more extensive survey around him. When he came down he said they were on a very high hill, and that the land fell away into a deep valley, covered with wood; that towards the sea there was a hill of rocks, and a great lagoon, with much water. Upon this intelligence they descended the hill, and as they went on found the bones of several deer; but in their whole journey they had seen no living beast. They concluded they were

now at least ten miles from home. Harry ascended another tree, and judged they were about five miles from the great cliffs they had before discovered, but that they must keep away more towards the sun rising. On this report, they determined to set off for the place, but soon found that Harry was out in his reckoning as to the distance, as it was evening before they could get to the bottom. Here finding themselves in a deep valley, the sun then far sunk in the west behind the hills, it became very gloomy, and they had thoughts of making a large fire for their security in the night; but soon after they found the wood not so thick, and fewer trees, and they could see the light at a distance between them. This gave them fresh courage, and in about a quarter of an hour they found themselves at the verge of the wood. Here a vast expanse opened to their view. Nature appeared very rude and wild indeed, and it seemed as if some great convulsion of the earth had torn or split the mountains around them, there being scattered about in every direction huge massy fragments of rocks. Between some of these they concluded to take up their lodging for the night, which they did, without any interruption, having made a large fire round them. On the morrow, they mounted one of the large rocks, and taking a fresh survey, they could see the mangroves and low country clear out to sea, which they supposed to be about five miles' distance. Having thus satisfied their curiosity, they returned home to make a report of their expedition.

CHAPTER XXXV.

TWENTY-SECOND YEAR OF MY RESIDENCE.

I HAD now been on this shore twenty-one years and two months, when a very uncommon event happened, of which I shall give a plain and faithful narrative. One day as Bell and I were out in the bay, fishing for our pleasure, he observed to me that it was somewhat odd I had never expressed any desire to visit his new northern discovery, as he was sure it could be easily accomplished by sea. I told him I really had a wish to go there, and that I hoped speedily to put it in execution ; but that we must leave some one at home, to protect the family during our absence.

" Well, then," said he, " you and Harry can go ; I will remain at home ; he can stand pilot, and will, I am sure, steer you to the place."

I determined to make this expedition ; and when we came in, intimated as much to my brother Harry, who was much pleased with the thought of accompanying me, and said he could hit the place exactly. I desired him to get one of our best boats ready, and all other matters needful for our excursion.

About two days after we put down the lagoon, and got the length of Tower's Field by two o'clock in the afternoon, weathered Whale Point, and got the whole length of Boom Bay in the evening. Here we put up for the night. In the morning we put to sea again, in order to get round a long point. We now opened a new scene of country. Along this shore we ran at the

rate of about five knots an hour. Harry concluded we should soon see the cliffs from the sea ; but we coasted the shore, till by my judgment we were at least eight leagues from our own bay, and had thoughts of returning back, just as we were abreast of a high bluff point of land full of tall trees. Here we proposed to go on shore and stay for the night, and make our way back early the next morning. After we had landed, and made a good fire, it being towards evening, Harry mounted a tree, and looking about him, said, we were not above a mile from the lagoon, for that he saw the cliffs quite plain.

"Then let us make up a tent for the night," said I ; "and in the morning we will go round the point, if the wind stands."

The next morning we got round by sunrise, but not a sign of any lagoon could I see at all. When we got about a mile further I saw something like the mouth of a small lagoon, which I should not have given myself the trouble to enter, had not Harry spied at a distance the tops of the cliffs between the bushes. We put in, and found a narrow pass for the space of a mile or so, not more than a ship's length wide, and very crooked ; it then opened into a much longer space, and the water was above three fathoms deep. We now met with another strait for a short length, and all at once we opened a lake, at least a mile or more across, surrounded by a stony flat shore. This ran back half a mile or more, then began to rise a most tremendous mass of rocks, cliffs, and huge fallen stones. As we were viewing this scene I took up my glass, and had not held it long to my eye, before I cried out to Harry, in great surprise, that I saw a black man, or some wild creature resembling a man,

moving among the rocks. This startled Harry, and he begged the glass of me. As he was looking, he perceived him move to a clear place, and returning the glass to me, said, "It is a strange man indeed; and, brother, let us be going back directly, if you please."

I told him not to be afraid, for, were it Lucifer himself, I was determined to speak to him, if possible, before we returned.

"Then," said he, "if you are not afraid of him, I won't be afraid of him, brother."

We put to shore, and both got out, with our guns, and marched directly for the place where we saw him first, but found that he had not yet discovered us. As we approached somewhat nearer to him I sat down, where he could not see me, to take a more distinct view, before we hailed him. He appeared to be a tall old negro man, with his head and beard white as wool; he was naked, and had a staff or club in his hand. We were at this time about half a mile from him, and found that as yet he had not perceived us. On a sudden we lost sight of him among the rocks; we then advanced apace, but could not get a glimpse of him again; therefore we ran back to our boat, dreading lest we might be deprived of her, before we could reach the place where she lay. Soon after we had put off from the shore on our return, Harry perceived a smoke rising among the rocks, and cried out, "There we have him again."

"There let him remain for the present," said I; "we will make for home as soon as possible."

"What, brother, afraid?" said Harry.

"No!" replied I; "but what would you have done if more of them had appeared, and they had ran away with our boat when we had left her?"

“ Then we must have gone home by land,” said he.

“ What, and starve by the way, without fire tacking?” said I.

We at once put away before the wind, and got home in two days, after getting aground on Whale Point. Our people were rejoiced to see us, and Bell had the whole relation of our voyage from me. I must frankly confess, when the old negro disappeared, my former idle notions of the Yahoos returned full upon me; but when I perceived the smoke from between the rocks, my mind was easy again.

After hearing the account of my voyage, Bell said he was determined to go, if I would permit Rory to accompany him, and he would not return till he had spoken to the old man, if he could find him in any reasonable time. I told him, with all my heart; and accordingly, about a week after, they set forward by the chart I furnished them with. The account Bell gave me was as follows. They got to the place with ease, and after waiting a whole day without seeing a living being, they concluded that the whole was visionary, and that we had been deceived. No kind of smoke was to be seen any where; yet he was bold enough to continue there in the boat all night, and early in the morning Rory waked him to shew him a smoke. Upon this he told Rory to bring out the two guns and follow him. They made right away for the place from whence the smoke rose, which was about a mile from them, up among the rocks. As they were about two-thirds on their way, and just turning round a large high piece of rock, the grey dog they had with them gave a long howl, when to his great surprise a tall black old man stood but a short distance from them. He was turning to leave them with as much speed as he was able, but

appearing feeble in his joints, he was necessarily slow in his motions. Bell hailed him, but he seemed unwilling to have any parley. They went immediately up and stopped him, upon which the poor creature fell down on his knees, and began to beg for mercy, in Spanish. Bell desired him not to have any fears on their account, as they intended him no harm ; and desired to know how many of them there were in that place, as he appeared to be so old and helpless. To his great surprise, the old man told him he was alone, and that he had been there longer than he could well remember.

“ But would you not rather end your days,” said Bell, “ in the society of your fellow-creatures? How do you live? What do you eat? Does any one come to relieve you if you are in want?”

“ No,” he said ; “ nor have I spoke a word to any man since the time I first landed here, nor do I wish to speak to any man, or to see any man again for the rest of my days.” He then asked Bell where he came from ; and being told, he replied, “ Then go back to the same place, and do not trouble a poor old man, who neither asks nor wants assistance of any kind. I have lived long quiet since I left the faces of white men. I would not return to them ; they live upon the blood of poor black men, and could get nothing from me but dry bones ; I am too old for them ; so, young man, be advised by me, leave me where I am ; I may perhaps die before to-morrow.”

“ And who will you have to bury you ?” said Bell.

“ The crows !” he replied ; and began to move off ; but they followed him till he came to his fire, which was between four rocks, in a very secret place. When he found they followed him, he turned round to them,

and fixing his aged eyes upon Bell, stamped his staff on the ground, and with some degree of passion, cried out, "White man, trouble me no more! Go, I hate you, and all of your colour! I have but little blood left, let me die in quiet by myself."

Bell was not satisfied to leave him under this impression, which he thought he had the power to remove. He therefore began by telling him, that though his opinion of his white brethren might be formed from his own unhappy experience, yet it was unjust. It was his particular misfortune to have fallen into bad hands; but the excesses of a few individuals should not attach infamy to the whole race. If he had spent a year or two with them at our habitation, his opinion of white men would be very different. The old man replied, that it was true he judged from the experience of his past life. He was now very old, and had no time to correct his judgment. He had no desire to be acquainted with white men. He said it was natural for them to speak in favour of their own colour; but even if what they asserted was true, he could relate such stories as would fully justify his aversion to them. Then with a kind of disdainful convulsive laugh, which shewed the violence of his resentment, he added, "White man good! No, no, no!"

Bell changed his mode, and began to soothe him. He said, it was true, he had observed, when in the islands, that the condition of the poor black men was very miserable. He had a great aversion to slavery. God had created man free. It was their birthright; and no man had a privilege to infringe this first law of nature.

Upon this the old man said, "Can you, then, blame me for wishing to keep myself free?"

Finding him grow somewhat more mild, he took the opportunity to desire he would give him some account of his life and misfortunes, and how he came to settle in this wretched place ; supposing that he must have suffered great misery before he could have taken so desperate a resolution.

“ True, true, white man,” said the poor old creature, with a heavy groan ; “ you see my head all white now ; but no matter. Yes, I have suffered.”

He then stopped short, and looking somewhat sternly, said, “ How did you find me out ? You are no Spaniard. What country did you come from ? ”

Bell said he was a Scotchman, and would endeavour, if he did not object to his plan, to make his old heart easy and happy yet before he died.

“ No, no,” said the old man ; “ no happiness for me. What can you do ? ”

“ In the first place,” Bell replied, “ you must go with me. I have a friend with whom I live. He has been on this shore for many long years, continually doing good to his fellow-creatures, although he has been unfortunate enough himself.”

“ What countryman is he ? ” said the old man.

“ English,” answered Bell.

“ Not the better for that,” he replied. “ Where do you live ? How far off ? ”

Bell told him about thirty miles to the southward, and that if he would go with them, he would find a resting place for his old bones, and a hearty welcome ; for he was sure his friends would receive him kindly, and cherish and comfort him for the rest of his life. He hoped this invitation, which was made with great sincerity, would be sufficient to induce him to

leave this forlorn and desolate place. The old man's countenance changed from stern and vindictive contempt to a mild and pleasing complacency, filled with hope.

After a short hesitation, he said, "If you live like free men together, and do not keep black people in slavery, I might perhaps feel some joy to be with you ; but will you swear, that if I change my mind, and wish to return to my old place again, you will not oppose my inclinations."

Bell told him he would willingly bind himself by an oath, to act exactly as he should wish ; that he would not only give no opposition to his inclinations, but would assist him in gratifying them, and convey him to whatever place he should direct, if he was not happy in our society.

The whole of this conversation passed in Spanish, but the old man said he could speak English once, having lived much with them at Barbadoes and Jamaica. Bell said they now began to grow hungry, and told the old man they would set off early the next day, pointed out to him where the boat lay, and then took leave of him for this time. When the morning came they observed the old man on his way to the boat. They soon embarked with him, put out of the lagoon, and arrived at our place in perfect safety. Before they came in, Owen, who had been on the look out, returned, and said, he thought he heard a shell blow. This soon mustered us together, and we set out for the landing-place. Soon after which we heard the conch again, and not far off. Presently we saw them approach, and to our great surprise discovered a third person in the boat. The women and young ones were so alarmed that they ran home. When they had landed,

we were obliged to assist the old man, as he could hardly rise. His legs were quite cramped by sitting so long in the boat, and this, together with his great age, rendered him extremely feeble. However, we brought him home safe to our habitation, and seated him in the shade. It was somewhat diverting to see our young people come from their hiding-places to take a peep at his odd figure, as he sat with his hands over his knees, and his chin almost resting on them. I desired Harry to get a bed made up for him in the shed where old Nunez had formerly slept. While I was giving these orders, I found the old man had risen from his seat, and was stumping about as well as his stiff joints would let him. I walked up to him, and asked, in Spanish, what was his name? He said he had three names, one given him by the English, which was Sambo, after a favourite negro who had died, and in whose room he was purchased; by the Spaniards he was called Diego; and in his own country, Quammino. I asked him how old he was? He said he could not tell for true; but that he had a wife when he came from the Ebo country to Barbadoes. I asked him if he recollects what king governed the English people at that time?

“Yes,” he said, “very well. They said the king at that time was a woman, and a great warrior, as he heard.”

This could be no other than Queen Anne. His whole appearance and general decrepitude shewed him to be of a great age. I asked him how it was that he had so great a hatred to white men, as my friend had informed me he had? I should like to hear his story, perhaps he had been the aggressor, and they were not so much to blame. What had he to say to this?

He replied thus. "The white man who brought me here to see you, and to hear you talk, promised to take me back whenever I wished to go to my old place. If you think me a bad man, send me back to my own rocks again."

I bade him take courage and fear nothing. He was come to a place of rest and quietness. He should have our constant friendship, as I was sure he would deserve it. I was the master here ; and he was freely welcome to share our conveniences and comforts. I would not fatigue him now, but I should be glad, after a night's rest, if he would give me the particulars of his story.

He then came and took both my hands, and said, "I do believe you have learned to be a good man, or you would not be contented to live in this poor place of woods and rocks ; and, master, if I live till to-morrow, I will tell you all I can recollect of my sad story."

I then took my leave of him for the night.

I was surprised that a man of his age should not be bald. His head, with the quantity of white wool that was on it, was as large as a thrum mop, with a thick bushy white beard. This, added to his black skin, gave him a most extraordinary appearance. He had certainly been a very stout man in his younger days ; was at least six feet high, but now stooped much on account of his age.

The next morning I paid a visit to the old man, who was much recovered from his fatigue. I sat and chatted with him some time, and to my great satisfaction found that I had inspired him with confidence. I expressed some curiosity to hear his story. He said it was a painful exercise to be obliged to remember it. His misfortunes had left indelible marks behind them.

It was a story of blood. He had met with but little of human kindness. He believed the recital of it would excite my pity towards him ; but he was sure, after having heard it, I should not wonder at the hatred he expressed towards white men. I told him that as he might now consider himself a perfectly free man, and in a place of rest and quiet for the remainder of his days, if he thought proper, the retrospect of his past life, though in a certain degree painful to him, might be beneficial to those who were made acquainted with it, and not entirely useless to himself ; as he would have so much reason to be grateful to the Author of his being, for having given him strength to support himself under such severe trials, and for having at length provided him with a peaceful retreat, when he least expected it. He expressed a grateful sense of his preservation ; but added, that life had no further pleasure for him ; hope had been long extinct ; and that till he met with us, he had only looked forward with satisfaction to the day of his death as the period of his misery. I cannot preserve his exact words, but this was the substance of what he said. He now began upon his story.

STORY OF THE OLD NEGRO MAN.

“IN my own country I was a free man. I had a wife and child, and lived happy with them. Some white men came to our place to buy slaves that had been taken in war. I was not a slave; I had no fear of them, because they had no power over me, being free. I was taken away by force, and carried on board a ship, which was full of black men. I was chained, as many others were. My wife was in the ship too, but I did not know it, till she found me out some time after. We all supposed we were taken from our country to be killed, perhaps to be devoured, as none of our people ever came back again. My wife was suffered to go backwards and forwards to the cabin: she discovered and informed us where the arms were placed; she contrived to furnish us with some. We agreed to rise upon our enemies, to destroy them, and return to our own country. A discovery was made of our proceedings and intention. My wife was seized in the act of conveying away arms; she was tied up to the mast and whipped sadly, to make her confess which of the blacks had set her on this business. She would not confess. She was again tied up and whipped; still she would not confess. The captain gave orders to continue her punishment till she made the discovery. They did, and she died under the whip. She was thrown into the sea. I was below, I could see nothing, but heard all. My heart grew big; I could not eat; I was sick; I was silent. Had they known she was

my wife, they would have whipped me dead also. From that hour I hate, I curse all white men!"

Here he was obliged to stop for a few moments, to give vent to his feelings. I could not interrupt him ; he went on.

" Well, after this we came to Barbadoes ; a fisherman bought me ; he burnt my back with hot irons, to mark me as his slave. I who was born free was marked as a slave. My master was a mulatto man. I thought he would treat me better for that. He was very hard hearted and cruel ; he whipped me for no fault. My heart grew big again. I stay with him two, three years ; he whip me often. I love poor negro girl, she live about four miles from Bridgetown. My master give me leave to go see poor negro girl on a Sunday ; we make merry, stay at dance too late, not go home all night ; next day, afraid of the whip, not go home. Negro man Joe came to fetch me ; go home with negro man. My master tie me up, whip me sadly, said he would burn my cheek as a runaway. Look, here the mark where he burn. (Shewing his cheek.) I bid him kill me quite, I could not live with him. He bid me get a new master. He did not care who had me, if he had the money he paid for me. I knew one Mr. Freeman. from Jamaica. He bought me of my master. I went to Jamaica with him. He died of a fever soon after we arrived. I was sold again. My new master lived on the north side of the island. Knowing I had been a fisherman, he employed me that way, and my life was mostly spent on the water. I lived with this man several years, and had a wife, belonging to the same estate, by his consent. We had two children. One day as I was sitting

under the rocks on the sea beach, near a point of land, all at once three men jumped upon me and said, 'Vamus, vamus.' I was amazed, finding them to be Spaniards. They took me by force round the point, where lay a small picaroon sloop, on board which I was ordered. I there found more of my colour, whom they plundered like myself. I should not so much have grieved for my change, for my life was hard enough, but my wife and children were very dear to me. I was but a slave still; but when I thought of my dear wife and children my heart swell very big. I hate, I curse white men more than ever!

"They took me to St. Jago de Cuba, and there I was bought by a rich old gentleman, who finding, that I had followed fishing, gave orders that I should have the same employment under him. This old master used me kindly. I did every thing to please him. After living some time with him I could speak Spanish pretty well. He asked me one day if I had not a wife and children in Jamaica.

"I said, 'Yes, my wife and children very dear to me, but I never see them more.'

"'Never mind that, Diego,' said he, 'you shall have another wife here. We have plenty of young women, and you shall have your choice.'

"I thanked him, but thought no more of it that time. My master like me better every day; made me overseer over all the negroes who had any thing to do with boats or fishing, and by degrees I began to feel myself happier than I had been for years before. One day as we were at work on an old canoe, to patch her up my old master sent for me to come to him under a great tree where he was sitting. He said

to me, 'Diego, do you know old Maria's daughter, the mulatto girl, Isabella?'

"'Yes, master,' said I, 'very well.'

"'I am told,' he said, 'that she likes you very much. If you will have her for a wife, you have my consent.'

"I thanked him for his kind offer; and considering that I could never see poor Benneba and my children again, I took Isabella to be my wife. About six months after this my young master came home from the Havannah, where he had been for a considerable time on business for his father. He was my very good friend before he went on this expedition, but now he was quite changed, and grew very ill-natured to me on all occasions. I could not think the meaning of it; but one day my wife, when she was alone with me, said, she wondered what was the matter with young master; she believed he hated her, for he called her bad names very often, when he thought nobody heard him.

"'May be,' said I, 'he wanted you for himself.'

"'She did not know that,' she said; 'but it was very odd; she had done nothing to offend him,'

"Soon after she began to grow very sick, and a black man, old Cudjo, told me he was sure she was poisoned; that she would never have a child, but that she would look like it. This, indeed, from appearance, was true; and in about two years she died, never having been well since she was first taken with this sickness. Not long after an old negro woman, who was dying, sent privately to speak to me. She said she could not die without begging my forgiveness; but that indeed her young master had employed her to poison my wife. I had no means of

revenge ; complaint was useless ; but my mind did not forget. About a year after this, my old master seeing me at work, began to laugh, and said, ' Why, Diego, you have had bad luck in wives, I think.'

" ' I think so too, master,' said I.

" ' Why don't you make another trial ?'

" I said, ' No, Sir, no more wife for me.'

" ' Why so ?' he replied.

" ' Because I have had three good wives already, and white men take them all from me.'

" He desired to know how that had happened. I gave him a short account how I had been deprived of my wives. When I told him the last had been poisoned, ' Say you so ?' said he. ' If you can find out the person who committed this murder you shall have full justice done you.'

" ' Ah ! master,' said I, ' she is dead and gone home ; yet there is one alive who was concerned in this.'

" ' Tell me who that is,' he said, with a fierce look.

" I fell on my knees, and begged he would suffer me to be silent. He seemed much offended ; said he had always treated me well, and expected that I would have trusted him. He left me, as I thought, in great anger. I was very unhappy at this. Soon after two negroes came, and told me I must come to the stock-house. I threw down the net I was at work on, and went with them. I was there laid on my back, with my head in a hole, and left for two days. The third day my master ordered me up to the house. When I entered, he said, ' You see, Diego, that I have been justly offended at your conduct ; that if I know how to reward, I likewise know how to punish. I am resolved to sift this matter to the bottom. You must

either acquaint me who it was that was concerned in the death of Isabella, or prepare yourself to undergo a much more severe punishment. I will have the truth, without any compromise or qualification whatever.'

"I once more fell on my knees, and begged him to excuse me; for the loss of my wife I could receive no reparation; the punishment of the offender would not restore my lost quiet; the desire of revenge had subsided in my bosom: but I would spare those for whom I had the greatest esteem from the pain of such a discovery. I begged him, as he valued his own happiness, to urge me no further. I was willing to bear my wrongs in patient silence. He looked sternly at me, and said, 'As you value your life answer me without further equivocation.'

"I replied, 'That my life was then equally in danger by the discovery as by my silence. If I continue obstinate, your anger will take away my life. If I make the confession which you now force from me, my danger will be equal from my young master Hernan, your son, when he returns from Vera Cruz; for it was he who employed old Quasheba to poison my wife.'

"My master clapped his hands violently to his head, and, with some vehemence, cried, 'You have said enough—go—retire.'

"He left the room suddenly in great agitation. I was set to my work as usual. My master took no notice of me; but some of the white men about the house said, they were sure some great mischief would happen to me. This made me very sorrowful. My young master would not be home for two months, and they all said some great storm was gathering over my head. Considering my life in danger, I came to the resolution of leaving the place, and flying, I did

not care where, so that I could hide for ever from the faces of white men, whom I hated, as the causes of my misery.

" My mind was intent on my purpose to escape the first opportunity. A favourable circumstance soon occurred, which put it in my power to effect it. Soon after this, I was ordered to collect several things to be taken to a country-house my master had about five leagues to windward, where much company was invited to meet him. I let no one know my intentions, but put every thing on board that I thought would be useful to me, and then, with another negro called Mingo, put off for my master's place. When we arrived, I bid the old negro who lived there collect yams and many other things, which I knew would be useful to me, to go by the boat's return. On the next morning, at sunrise, I went down to the boat alone, having stowed away all my little cargo the evening before. I at once shoved her off, hoisted my sail, and stood directly out on a wind till the evening, when the land wind came and carried me clear off the coast, so that by morning I was got so far out that I had almost lost sight of the shore. In about five days I fell in with the place where your friend Mr. Bell found me ; and there have I lived by myself from that time, without seeing the face of any human creature. There I expected to die, without regretting the world which I had abandoned ; and in love with my solitude, which hid me from the sight of white men, as I hoped for ever. This is my story. I would have avoided your friend, if it had been possible. He was resolved I should not. He succeeded. I believe his intentions were fair and good. I am once more with white men ; but you seem to be of a better sort than those I have

met with. If you use me with kindness, I may yet live a little while to thank you. If I prove troublesome, and you grow tired of my company, your honour is engaged to take me back again to my rocks, where I may lay myself down and die content and quiet."

Quammino having finished his story, I gave him every assurance of my friendship and protection, and hoped at least to be made an exception from his general hatred of white men. I then asked him how long he thought he had lived at that place?

"Moons without number," he said. But as he had kept no kind of reckoning, I could only judge from the age he supposed himself to be when he fled from St. Jago de Cuba, which was about forty-five, and that he must now be full seventy, if not more. Yet notwithstanding his age, now he had fully recovered from his fatigue, he seemed active and strong, particularly in our fishing parties. I inquired how he had lived and provided for himself. He said by fishing, and eating yams and other roots and fruits, which he had cultivated from those he had brought with him, there being good ground enough at the back of the rocks; and as to his sleeping and other matters, if I would make a short voyage with him one day, he would shew me the whole. Upon this I asked him, if he had a desire to return again. Just as I pleased, he said. It was a matter of very little consequence where an old man, who was past his labour, laid himself down to die.

"But would you willingly leave our company to remain there alone again?"

He confessed the longer he lived with us the more regret he should feel to part with us.

" Well, then," said I, " here are young ones enough to cherish and provide for an old man. You are quite at home ; do what you please ; go where you please ; and amuse yourself in the best manner you can ; the toil and labour be ours, who are better able to bear them."

I had lived here almost twenty-two years when I received a *coup de soleil*, or stroke of the sun, as Bell called it. I suffered very much indeed under it, and would not wish my greatest enemy to be visited with such a torment. The nature of this disorder is, that the pain comes on as the sun rises, and towards mid-day the patient becomes quite delirious. The throbbing of the head is so great, that the stomach becomes quite sick, till by an effort it relieves itself. Bell applied some large leaves, which he bound round my head, and these effected a cure.

CHAPTER XXXVI.

TWENTY-THIRD YEAR OF MY RESIDENCE.

SOME few months after my head-ach had left me, I took a fancy to visit old Quammino's former dwelling. He was quite pleased with my proposal. I mentioned my intention to Bell, and proposed that my son should bear us company, as he wished much for a ramble. Accordingly, in a few days we proceeded on our expedition ; the old man, Owen, and myself. The particulars of our voyage I need not relate, except that

we found a fine piece of ambergris, just off Tower's Field, on the strand. When we came into the lagoon the poor old man gave a heavy sigh, and pointing to a short distance, "There," said he, "was my habitation. Trouble never reached me at that place, till I saw white man's face again, then trouble came back to me ; for I supposed that I should be forced away against my will, and that made me so savage to Mr. Bell, as I did not think there were such white men as I have found you to be in the world."

"Yonder," said I, "is the spot where I first saw you."

"Ay, but that was not the place where I used to sleep," said he ; "but if you please I will get the boat up to the head of the bay, and will shew you where my canoe lies. I believe you would not easily find her out without my directions."

He did so ; and when we got thither, there opened another inlet, which I had not seen before, it being entirely land-locked. We entered, and came up to some of the fallen cliff ; and in a place formed by the fall of the stones into a kind of sharp archway, overgrown with poppenack bushes, lay his canoe, quite sheltered from the sun. This canoe Quammino told me he had made himself, and I gave him full credit for the assertion ; for she was of the worst shape I had ever seen, and very small, not more than nine feet long ; but she suited his purpose well enough.

I asked him what became of the boat he arrived in at that place ?

"Oh," said he, "she lies sunk a little way to the left yonder, but quite rotten at this time. We will now go to my old lodgings."

We made our way over rocks and broken paths, till a large grove of small trees appeared before us.

"That is the place," said he. "I planted all that grove myself. Now follow me."

We entered among the trees, and soon began to descend among rocks, to a considerable depth, till we came to a kind of level, walled up on each side by the accidental fallings of the cliff. The place was about the size of a large cabin. This he had covered with limbs of small trees, and thatched with leaves, so that it really had a comfortable appearance. When we had seen his bed, he desired us to visit his cooking-room. This was about twenty yards from his bed-chamber, and consisted of a large shelving place among the rocks. From hence we proceeded to his store-room. This, indeed, was better furnished than the rest; for here we found several useful articles, such as fishing-nets, old darts, paddles, and a variety of other things, with some remains of his old sail. I observed several kinds of old Spanish tools, quite worn out with frequent use.

"I have one more place to shew you," said he, "though I never made it a place of residence, as I had no look out from it."

So after dinner he led us round to the south side of the hill, and shewed us a very large opening in the cliff.

"Here," said he, "men have lived formerly, or at least used to frequent this place for a time, for there are marks of fires having been made. A pond of fresh water lies below in the valley, where I discovered an old path, with the remains of burnt sticks in abundance, with several marks cut with knives in the rocks. I

told him I had no doubt but that the place was well known to the pirates in former times, as well as that part of the coast which was inhabited by me and my family. He now shewed me where his yams and potatoes grew, and where his fishing-ground was. He generally used to strike the fish with a small dart, or kill them at night with an old cutlass, by the light of a wooden torch. He said he had scarcely tasted any flesh meat since his first arrival at that place.

Soon after this Quammino led me into the pass through the rocks. I did not at the moment take notice that Owen did not follow us. As such places were common with us, it no way excited his curiosity. He had clambered up the cliffs in order to explore the country. When we returned I heard my son's voice, just as we came under an opening above our heads. I looked up and saw him upon an eminence, at no great distance. He called out that he saw a sail in the offing.

"Bon voyage," said old Quammino; "let them go their way, we are happy without their company."

I asked if he had not sometimes seen vessels pass by?

He said, "Yes; several times. That once in the night he had seen one on fire, as he believed."

"Ay," said I, "this was a long time ago. We saw it likewise from our place. You must have spent many years at this place."

He said he believed he had lived as long here by himself as he had before lived with people.

There being a large stone on the ground behind us, which made a comfortable seat, "Come," said I to the old man, "let us sit down and take a pipe together." I took out my fire tackle, and began to strike a light.

While I was doing this, I said, "It is a great pity, Quammino, that you have never been made a Christian. You seem to have a very sound judgment, and can reason upon things very well."

"Ah! master," he replied, "I am not so ignorant in this respect as you imagine. The old gentleman at St. Jago de Cuba had me made a Christian, and I thought it would make white man love me better; but no such thing. I hear the good book of God read, where love, and peace, and kindness are recommended; but white men do not practise what they read there. They fight, and cheat, and kill one another. Black men cannot do any thing worse than they do. They go to churches and tell God they will never do harm to any people. They come out and do just as before, forgetting what they have promised. They say black men should be whipped to make them good slaves. Now, can they expect blacks to be good who are not Christians, when they who are so shew them so bad an example? We have bad men enough in our country, and when they come among the whites they learn their wickedness too. They regard black men only as they do horses, mules, and other animals, to do work for them. They say too, the devil is black men's father." He then asked me if I could tell who that Cain devil was, as the whites said the black men were his children? Now this he thought all wrong; for he believed the same God made them all black and white. "Did I not see other things differ in colour on the outside, but the same within? Tell me what difference in colour there is between black man's heart and white man's heart? I remember my master had a white horse that died and was skinned by the negroes

in Jamaica ; and when I lived with my master at St. Jago, he had black horse died, and when he was skinned the colour was the same as the white one."

He went on a long time in the same strain. I sat all the while silently puffing away ; for, to confess the truth, I had but little to say in favour of my own colour ; but told him, I thought he was a better man than thousands who pretended to more knowledge, and I was well assured that there would be no distinction of colour with God.

Owen now joined us, and we returned to the old man's bed-chamber, where we made a tolerable supper, all circumstances considered ; and likewise rested for the night on Quammino's palmetto bed. In the morning I asked the old man if he did not find it very melancholy, when first he arrived, to be so much alone ?

He said yes ; but that he soon became used to it ; and, indeed, as he had wished it, he was very soon reconciled to his situation. There was one circumstance that very much surprised and alarmed him. When he had been there, as he believes, about a year, he heard a loud noise, as it were from a large body of men shouting or giving a great huzza. That in the course of his being there he heard it above twenty times, but never more than once at a time. That it sounded sometimes from one quarter and then from another.

I told him that I rather believed it to proceed from the wind gathering in that large cave, and making such a report. This he did not think satisfactory ; but we could find no other cause, so let it pass.

In the morning we prepared for our return to my old habitation. Just as we had proceeded about half way out, a musket was discharged to seaward of us. This gave us a great alarm ; but as I had braved so many

dangers, I was resolved not to be terrified at this, but to act coolly and deliberately. The old man was likewise very composed. We therefore concluded to push out without the least fear or dread. Owen was really terrified, as he had been so little accustomed to strange faces. When we got out, I observed a vessel at anchor about half a mile to the north of us ; and presently Owen pointed to three men sitting on the beach not far from us. I determined to speak to them, and for that purpose put to shore. I jumped out of the boat, and walked on the beach till I came within about forty yards of them. I then hailed them in Spanish ; they immediately rose and returned an answer, on which I advanced up to them. They were three elderly men, and Spaniards as they said, and belonged to the schooner then at anchor. They had been looking for a watering-place. I told them, if they were bound down the coast, I could shew them a very convenient one, which would answer their purpose. They said they were. I then asked from whence they came ? Campeachy they said, and their captain's name was Joachim Valdes. They wished me to go on board with them when their boat came on shore. I thanked them, and made a signal for my companions to come up to us, which in a short time they did. When they observed the different complexions of my comrades, one of the men asked me of what country I was, as he knew by my speech that I was neither Spaniard nor Portuguese ? I candidly acknowledged myself to be an Englishman ; which I thought better than to affect any disguise, situated as we then were. Poor Owen stood motionless before them ; and old Quammino kept silence, fearing lest they might be from St. Jago de Cuba and should recollect him. To put him at

once out of his fear, I told him they were from Cam-peachy.

As we were sitting all together on the beach, one of the Spaniards, as I took them to be, the same person who had discovered that I was not of that country, turned to old Quammino and said, "Faith and troth, my old Trojan, and you will not pass upon us for a Spaniard, will you? Why, by my soul, man, you look as if you had been born in the days of Fin Mac-Coul."

I was not a little surprised to find by his tongue that this was an honest Hibernian, and he was no less so at hearing old Quammino answer him in good English.

"Oh bubba, bubba, boo!" said he, "we are all English together I find now." And then addressing himself to me, said, "And pray what is your name, honey: are you any thing of a seaman; and what brought you here, joy, among this spotted clan?"

I told him my story was rather too long for the present, but that my name was Penrose.

"Sure!" said he, "may it be Willy, then? Was your name ever Willy Penrose at all, honey?"

"How is it possible," I replied, "that you should ever know Llewellyn Penrose, who has been so long lost to his country, unless you mean some other of my name?"

"Never mind that, my jewel; but tell me, did you not once belong to the Flying Oxford?"

I told him I did.

"And don't you remember the man that was washed overboard and washed inboard again, honey, in a gale of wind off the Bay of Biscay?"

I said, "I well remembered the circumstance, but

had forgotten the person's name, except that it was Taddy."

" Oh ! that's right, by St. Patrick, child : it was it was Taddy Lost, sure enough ! But what keeps you among these dung-coloured thieves ?"

" Shipmate," said I, " many changes have I gone through since that day ; but to cut the matter short, as I see your boat is coming to shore, you must know this lad is my son, and never knew what a thief meant."

" Oh ! Willy, I ask your pardon. Young lad, my good fellow, tip us your daddle, honey !"

He then shook Owen so heartily by the hand that it made the poor boy stare again.

" Ah ! messmate Willy," said he, " I knew you were no Spaniard, by that little English brogue on your tongue, my dear, agrah !"

The boat being now arrived, they begged me to go on board with them. I told Owen to come alongside the schooner with our boat also. So off we went. When we got on board, Taddy took me aft to the captain, and told him he had found a countryman on shore, who would shew them a watering-place. Captain Valdes received me kindly, and asked me many questions concerning my habitation and manner of living.

After I had briefly informed him of the circumstances of my life, he was pleased to say, " It became every man to treat me with all kindness and civility, as perhaps God had placed me there to administer relief to distressed seamen ; and that he was glad to hear I was so well resigned to my very uncommon way of life." He then sent a boy for a flask of aquadienta, and drank to me. I told him it was what I was quite unused to,

and begged to decline taking any. He laughed heartily, and said neither English nor Dutchmen ever flinched the glass, and he could not take my excuse on this first acquaintance. Upon this I drank it off. He gave orders to run up the cable, and we stood down along-shore, keeping a good offing, as I told him there were many shoals on the coast. As the wind failed us in the afternoon, we let go the anchor off Whale Point, and there remained for the night. I now thought it would be proper to send off Owen and the old man, to inform them at home what had fallen out in our absence.

Early on the morrow, the wind coming up at east, we stretched off, and in a short time came abreast the point of Long Key, where we came to again. I then went on shore with them, and shewed them the watering-place. I begged the captain to accompany me to my habitation, and see my family and place of residence, as I expected my boat would be with us presently. About noon Bell and Owen came off to us from our place and saluted the captain. In the evening he went on shore with us. When we got into our own lagoon, Owen took up the conch and gave a blast; Harry answered it directly from the shore. The captain observing it, asked the reason. I told him it was our stated custom; that we all had a particular way of sounding, by which means we knew each other's blast, so that if strangers came (it being an Indian custom likewise) we were prepared to receive them on their visit to us. When we came to the landing-place, our whole family ran down to see the strangers.

Captain Valdes was surprised to see so large a company, and asked which was my wife. I at once intro-

duced him to my lady and children, and then to Harry as my brother-in-law, and the rest. Bell was master of the ceremonies, as he spoke Spanish with fluency. Harry and Rory went to get some cray-fish, and the females provided yams and other matters, as I had directed them.

While this was doing, the captain, Bell, and myself, walked round our habitation. We shewed him our burying-ground, and the stone we had placed over old Nunez, his countryman. Owen, in the simplicity of his heart, desired me to shew the captain the place where we had found the treasure. This was fortunately said in English, which the captain did not understand. Bell gave him a check privately, and he held his tongue from that time. After supper, the captain asked if we had no desire to revisit our native country. I told him there was a time when I had felt a strong desire to do so, but it had long subsided, and I was now content to end my days where I had lived so long in peace and quiet. Bell expressed a similar resolution ; and said so long as he could enjoy my company, he had nothing to regret which the world could give him ; he had thoroughly proved my friendship, and knew its value ; he had no cares, he wanted for nothing, and what earthly king could enjoy more happiness.

I had prepared my own bed for the captain, and we all turned in at about eleven o'clock. The next morning I went with him to the Long Key, and there renewed my acquaintance with my old messmate Taddy Lost. When he saw me coming, he cried out,

“ Ah! Willy, and is it you, my dear? sure enough I’m glad to see you again ; I have been telling my shipmates all about you, honey, and how and where

I first became acquainted with you. Faith and that's a long, long time ago, my dear ; but we'll be on board presently, and then we'll have a little drop of the creature together, for old acquaintance' sake, honey."

I thanked my old shipmate, and went on board with the captain. About half an hour after the boat came alongside with the water. The captain proposed to take leave of us this afternoon, or early the next day. Taddy now came aft, and making his leg to the captain, asked me if I would not take a parting drop of grog with him before I left the schooner ; he was but a poor foremast-man to be sure, and perhaps I might be much richer than he ; yet he hoped I would not forget old times.

"Forget," said I, "no ; for the honour of old England and old Ireland too ; if it was the last drop of grog I am ever to drink, I will take it from thy hands, my old boy."

"Well, then," he replied, "here's merry madness to all misers, Mr. Penrose."

I received the calabash from him, and drank to all true hearts and sound bottoms. While I was drinking, "Ad's flesh man," said he, "do you never send home to the ould country at all, at all ? Trust me with a letter, my dear, and I'll deliver it sure enough at Surinam to some Dutchman bound home. You may depend upon me ; as sure as the devil's in Ireland I'll not fail my promise."

I returned him thanks, and promised, if they did not sail before the next day, I would forward a letter by him. Just as I had spoken these words a lad at the mast-head cried, "Vela, vela." This I knew meant a sail ; and he pointed her to be in the offing.

Orders were immediately given to hoist a St. Andrew's jack, or what our seamen call a ragged staff. This was no sooner done than the word passed forward to run up the anchor. On this I went to take my leave of the captain. He told me it was a sloop that sailed in company with them, and he would stand out to join her, as she was bound to Surinam with them, but had parted company in thick weather about seven days ago. I bid Owen jump into our boat; and had but just time to shake hands with Captain Valdes, when they filled and stood out to sea; Lost at the same time waving his red cap, and crying, "Long life to you, Willy; long life my jewel." We remained among the reefs for some time, striking fish, and observing their motions. At last we saw them speak each other, and then both stand away south.

We returned home and lived on after the old manner, without any thing new happening until the year ran out; and by my account I had been on this shore full twenty-three years.

CHAPTER XXXVII.

TWENTY-FOURTH YEAR OF MY RESIDENCE.

ONE day as Bell and I were in the bay together, he said he had observed a great change in the manners of my son Owen of late. I told him I had not noticed any such change, except that I thought he grew more sedate, which was natural, as he had now nearly reached the years of manhood.

“What age may he be?” said Bell.

“About eighteen,” I replied.

“Well then, my friend, the sooner you find a wife for him the better. You know how much we all love him.”

“As to that matter, messmate,” I replied, “there will be but little difficulty in obtaining a wife for him from among our friends; and they will be proud enough to execute the commission, or to give him his choice of all the Indian girls belonging to their tribe.”

On this Bell began to laugh, and said, “I see you are ignorant of the whole matter; why your son is in love already.”

“For God’s sake what do you mean?” said I. “Not with your wife I hope!”

“No, no, no,” he replied, “a very different object I assure you; one by many degrees fairer than my wife; and the best of it is he does not know what ails him. But I will explain the whole to you. You must recollect that Owen has often heard us extol the beauty of

our fair countrywomen. Perhaps at first it made but little impression on him; but as he grew older, and nature began to stir within him, he paid more attention to our discourse, and would frequently ask questions concerning them; so that I plainly perceived he had formed in his mind, from our description, an ideal beauty, which engrossed the whole of his thoughts. I will now tell you how I found all my suspicions confirmed on this subject. You may remember, that in Captain Valdes's cabin there was a beautiful picture of the Virgin. I was with Owen when he first saw it. The effect was violent and instantaneous. He was confused—he changed colour—he trembled—his whole soul seemed to issue from his eyes—he had no consciousness but for the object before him. I spoke to him—he heard me not. I took him by the arm to lead him out of the cabin. He started as one suddenly awakened from sleep—looked at me—then again at the picture—then on the ground. His eyes were filled with tears; and he followed me without uttering a word. I saw the conflict that was passing in his mind. The form he had just seen was the image of that ideal perfection which his fancy had represented to him. It was decorated with all those exterior charms which his warm and creative imagination had bestowed upon it, with a peculiar turn of features which fixed it at once as the object of his affection. I was resolved to watch the farther progress of this rising passion. I saw him soon after steal, unobserved as he thought, into the cabin. I followed him. He approached the picture with a bashful timidity, as if he was fearful of offending the object it represented. The virgin was painted with an air of pensive melancholy. From a kind of sympathetic correspondence,

his features took the same cast. He drew nearer to it, but with as much tenderness and caution as if he had been afraid of disturbing its contemplations ; he sat down, sighed, then fixed his eyes on it in silent but most expressive attention. I now thought it was time to break in upon his reverie ; on finding me near him he seemed ashamed, and hurried out of the cabin as if to conceal the motive of his revisiting it. Putting all these things together, I am persuaded he is in love, and that you and I have been the innocent cause of giving a direction to his passion towards one of a fairer complexion than he is likely to meet with in this part of the world. The picture corresponded with our description, and is the immediate object of his affection ; it will require no little ingenuity and perseverance on our part to induce him to transfer his passion from so fair an object to the browner beauties of this climate. However, time and fair treatment will, I doubt not, conquer his reluctance, and make us all easy on this subject ; leave the management of it to me."

The subject was now dropt for the time, and we returned home with our game.

Some time after this, as Harry and Owen were standing together one day, Bell observed that Owen was the taller of the two.

" Ay," said Harry, " Owen big enough for a wife now ; but where he get one among rocks and trees?"

" And pray, Mr. Harry," said Bell, " who made you so very wise ; and where do you think she can come from then ?"

" Ah !" replied Harry, " I know what I know."

" And, pray, what is that ?"

" I know if one ship come here with fine white and

red women, Owen soon get a wife ; he love white women like mad."

" What say you to all this, Owen ?" added Bell. " Are you foolish enough to set your heart upon what cannot be obtained ? Pray, will not one of our friends' daughters serve your turn as a wife, as they have done for your father and me before ?"

" I don't know," said Owen. " You tell me so much of the beauty of your countrywomen, that it appears to me that our women have none ; and if white ones were to have been had, neither you nor my father would have chosen as you did."

" Nonsense !" said Bell ; " can you be so silly as to be in love with what you have never seen ?"

" Yes," he replied ; " I see what white women are like in Captain Valdes' ship."

" Oh ! you did ; and you suppose all white women to be like that picture ! If you were to be among them, you would soon see your error ; but even if they were, none such are to be met with here : the thing therefore being impossible, you should drive such foolish fancy from your head, and act as your father and I have done before you, and be content with what God has provided for you, without reaching at the clouds, which you can never touch."

Thus ended the conversation for this time. The sky now began to be overcast very much, and it threatened to come up thick and dirty from the south-east. This was about five in the evening ; when it began to freshen up smartly, and all our thoughts were employed in collecting our light things and stowing them away in the best manner we could. About the shutting in of night the rain came on, attended with such tremendous

lightnings and thunder, as we had never before experienced ; and, to increase our terror, young Job, who was not more than eleven years of age, had taken little Somer with him down the lagoon in the canoe, and was not returned. What to do we could not tell, as by this time it blew so strong, none of us could keep our legs. Harry observing the distress my wife was in, insisted upon going to seek for them ; but just at this moment poor Job came in with the child safe and sound, to our great joy and surprise. I asked him how far off they had been. He said, not very far ; but that on their return he could not keep the canoe clear of the mangroves ; so that he and little Somer were forced to take to the water and swim to the landing-place. This was an undertaking that few except Indians would have ventured upon. The storm continued the best part of the night. About five in the morning I turned out to see what damage had happened, and soon beheld a sad scene of desolation. As for our kitchen, that was flat with the ground,—I mean all the heavy parts of it ; for as to the thatch and lighter materials, they were all blown as far as the cliff would suffer them. Not a goat, dog, or fowl was to be seen. I took a shell and gave a blast ; this brought forth all our family one by one, and I was well pleased to find no one absent or hurt. Bell observed, that had it been a cold climate, in all probability most of us had perished, as the rain had penetrated through every place except my cavern. We found several of our poultry dead, and the poor old mackaw also.

A few days after this, old Quammino shewed signs of a general decay of nature, which convinced us that he would not long continue among us ; and Harry came to us one morning and informed us that he had

died in the night, and that he went off quite easy, and without a groan. He was quite worn out, and died of old age, though perhaps the late storm might have somewhat hastened the event. It was a great satisfaction to us, that he had wanted for no kind of indulgence or care while he was in our family ; and that he had lived long enough in our society to be convinced that all white men were not such as he had supposed them to be, from his unhappy experience.

The remains of poor Quammino were deposited in our family burying-ground with decent respect. It now became necessary to begin upon our repairs immediately. Harry and Rory were principally employed in this business ; and when things were tolerably reinstated, Bell proposed an excursion to explore the coast, as we had not been able to stir out for more than six weeks. Accordingly we got all ready, and stood out for our groupar ground, which was about two or three miles from the mouth of our lagoon.

It happened, as I was sitting with the glass in my hand, I discovered away to the north what I supposed to be a wreck ; I gave Bell the glass, and desired him to look : he was of the same opinion, but it was so far northward, that we could but just make it. We continued at our killick-fishing for about two hours, and then returned home, intending to send the lads to make a further discovery on the morrow.

It was not till three days after that Owen, Job, and Rory set off on this expedition. They were well provided with necessaries for the trip ; and as Owen was to be captain, I gave him strict charge, that if it should prove a wreck, and any of the people were saved, to inform them that we were ready to give them every assistance in our power, of whatever nation they

might be; and if they could not understand their language, to return to us as soon as possible, that we might take steps accordingly. With this charge they went off. We saw them well out from the hill; and on the third day in the morning they returned, and Owen gave us the following account of his voyage.

It was a large vessel of three masts; but the main-mast was gone down low, as he said: she lay a great way out on a sunken reef; and was very much down in the water, quite in the sand: there was nothing to be found except part of the old sails, and an oar, which was stuck upright on the shore right abreast of her, with a bottle made fast to it, which they had brought with them. Not a creature was to be seen dead or alive, only a great smoke at a distance along-shore, more to the northward.

I ordered the bottle to be brought. When it came, Bell undertook to examine the contents. Having taken out the stopper with some difficulty, he found within it a small note to this effect, in Spanish: "The Polacre Isabella, shipwrecked on this coast, Aug. 29, anno 1769, Andreas Lopez captain; nine drowned; and seven, including the captain, left this coast in their boat, on the 31st, for the north." So that she was lost in that dismal night of which I have lately given an account. Whether she had fired guns or not we could not tell; the wind was so strong, and the distance so great from our place, that we could not have heard them.

In a short time after this, Bell, Owen, and Rory, paid a fresh visit to her, and brought home with them all the sailcloth that was left; and it came in good time, as we wanted sails for our boats very much; but we little wished for a supply at the expense of the

lives of our fellow-creatures. They likewise brought home some of her loose rigging, which was of good use to us. Bell said she appeared to have been a good stout vessel, almost new, as he believed from her blocks and other articles, and of about two hundred tons. A saint was painted on her stern, in a white dress.

Nothing of any moment happened from this time for about five months, when the Indians came on a visit, or rather it may be considered as a deputation of inquiry, to know how matters went on with us. We were somewhat surprised at their being able to find us out, as they were all four strangers, and had never been here before. But Rory told us they travelled by the trees and the sun, and by sleeps, as he said. Harry remembered two of them, and said their names were Atoney and Manabo. I begged to know the reason why they had neglected us so long. They said their old men did not think it proper to send so soon after the great sickness, lest it might break out again among us ; and they were bid to tell us, now we were grown men in our place, and had all we wanted, we could better live without them than on our first settlement upon the coast. I desired Harry to inform them that it was my wish that they would always consider Mr. Bell and myself as their very sincere friends ; and that we held them in equal respect with those who had been here before. They said, they had been informed that it was my custom to mark down the names of all my good friends on stones, but that I had not done so for them. Upon this Harry brought four stones and gave them to me : he then told me the name of each Indian, one by one, as first Atoney, then Manabo, Rabailo, and Pannee. Having inscribed them

all, they were placed among the rest, and the Indians were mightily pleased with the ceremony. They remained with us a whole week, and in a very friendly manner invited Harry and Owen to go home with them. Owen declined, saying, he had been there once, and had much rather go to Jamaica if an opportunity should offer. This very luckily he spoke in English, which they could not understand, or they might have been offended: however, we parted in a very amicable manner. When they were gone, I was resolved to have a serious conversation with Owen, for I saw plainly, by his wish to visit Jamaica, that his mind was still seriously impressed with the same idea. It was my intention first to talk over the subject with Bell, as he knew well enough that, as we were situated, to obtain him a white woman for a wife was almost impossible; and even if possible, not to be desired, as the very means would put our whole colony in danger: nor would the Spaniards admit of such a connection without obliging him to change his religion, which would give me great uneasiness.

Some time after, as Bell and I were abroad in the woods together, he observed to me that I did not seem so cheerful as usual. I confessed to him that Owen's conduct of late had made me very unhappy; he well knew that what he wished for, it was not in my power to obtain for him.

"Trouble yourself no more on this subject," said Bell; "leave the whole with me; I will take a course with him that will succeed I warrant you."

I told him he could not do me a greater act of kindness, and I hoped he would prosper in the undertaking; that I was too proud to let Owen see how

much concern it gave me, yet I loved him very tenderly.

After this, I heard no more of the matter for some months, but I discovered a visible alteration in Owen ; he was more cheerful and sprightly than he had been for some time : I observed this with pleasure, and one day Bell's wife said, now Owen was come back from Jamaica, she hoped soon to see him married to one of her own sort of women.

“ How so ? ” said I.—“ Ask my husband,” she replied ; “ he will tell you all about it.”

I was quite impatient to have a conversation with Bell on the subject, and asked my wife what she knew of the matter. She said, no more than that Mr. Bell had quite cured Owen of his desire to have a white-red woman for a wife ; and if I would ask Owen, she had no doubt but he would tell me so. However, I rather chose to have it from Bell, and soon found an opportunity as we were out a-fishing together. I asked him how the affair between him and Owen went on ?

He said, “ Swimmingly. He is quite out of conceit with white women. You may remember when he and I went after the flamingoes, I had him there alone. I began by telling him what I had heard from Harry, that he wished to go to Jamaica, to obtain a white-red girl for a wife ; but that he was mistaken in that point ; it would be no such easy thing for him to succeed if he was there.

“ ‘ How so ? ’ he said.

“ I told him the women there were all white, yellow, or as black as old Quammino ; that it was in England only, whence we came, that those charming white-red girls lived. Besides, if he could really obtain his wish

by marrying a white woman in Jamaica, he would put his and his wife's life in great danger. That white women there did not marry black men, and if they did, perhaps would be poisoned by their own sex for disgracing them, and most likely he would be poisoned too as the occasion of it.

"He hung his head, and seemed very thoughtful on hearing this. After some silence, he said, 'Perhaps it may be right, as you say, to look out for one of my own colour, since white-red women would not like me, and I would not go to Jamaica for a wife, where it would be a disgrace to marry one of my colour.'

"I said I was glad to hear him speak so reasonably.

"'I know,' he continued, 'that many of my own colour would have me, for the love they bear to my dear father and mother; and I shall try to love one of them, and make myself as happy as I can. So I need not go on the great water to look for a wife, to get poisoned for her.'

"Here our conversation ended, and I find by Harry's account that he no longer thinks of white or white-red women to choose a wife from."

This made me quite easy; and I thanked Bell for his kindness, in relieving me from this anxiety.

About this time we had a shock of an earthquake, which lasted full half a minute. It happened about midnight, and was attended with a noise like that of a cart shooting out rubbish. My wife complained of a sickness in her stomach occasioned by it; and what was very remarkable, all the ducks, geese, and fowls began to make a great noise in their different ways; but on a fresh shock of greater violence, they all became

silent. At this time Bell and Owen came to know how we were. I got up and asked them what they had observed. They said they believed the old cedar-tree was thrown down by the earthquake; and on visiting the spot we found it to be so. It had fallen directly across our path up the hill, and had broken another which stood opposite, of a less size. This kept us awake for the rest of the night. In the morning we began to cut away the branches, and clear the road up the hill. While the young ones were at this work, Bell and I went on the look-out. We were quite astonished at the prodigious swarms of butterflies of a new sort that were to be seen in every part of the woods. They were not large, and of a pale red colour, and disappeared in less than a week, so that not one was to be seen. Our Indians said that such numbers of butterflies were sure indications of great approaching heat. It was now the month of March.

As Bell and I were sitting together one day, talking over the various events of our lives, and the chances which had brought us together in this remote part of the world, separated from our friends and companions, and far removed from the pursuits of business or pleasure, which occupy the rest of mankind, our boys came down out of breath from the hill, and told us that all the sea was full of great fish fighting and contending with each other. This soon excited the curiosity of the whole family, and we all mounted the hill together. When we arrived at the top, we found it as the boys had reported; a great number of grampus were sporting, and throwing up water to a great height.

While we were viewing this scene, Bell said, "Sup-

pose we were to go out and try to catch one of them ; it would yield us a large quantity of oil for burning."

I laughed at the proposal, and asked him how he would proceed to put it in execution. He said they had brought sufficient rope from the polacre wreck to serve for line, and we were before furnished with a good harpoon ; then addressing himself to Harry, asked him if he would venture with him.

Harry said, " Yes, if I had no objection."

Owen joined in the request. So finding them bent on this sport, I made but one condition, in which I was very peremptory, and this was respecting Owen, that I would not on any account permit him to go—he must absolutely remain at home with me ; but Rory might accompany them. Owen was a little disappointed at this ; but as he was of a very sweet and gentle disposition, he soon yielded to my request, and became satisfied with my determination.

To work they all went, and soon got every thing ready for the expedition, so that in an hour or two they were off. I must confess I thought this a dangerous enterprize ; but as I knew Bell to be steady as well as bold, and that he seldom found himself in any danger without an expedient to extricate himself, and seeing the boys in high spirits, though entirely submissive to his control, I could not deny them what they had so much set their hearts upon. Little did I foresee the consequences of this hazardous undertaking ! A little more reflection might have prevented the whole ; but man is a short-sighted animal. Bell was older than myself, and I gave way to his judgment. Owen could not see them go off without being a little dejected, and he retired to his hut. I kept a constant

look-out after them, and saw the boat in a short time beyond the bay, and in full pursuit of the fish. Evening now came on ; but I kept my station, till I could no longer discern them ; then came down, concluding that they had given them chase round the Long Key to the southward. When night closed in, I gave orders that no one should retire to rest, but make up a large fire, and wait their return. Owen said I need not fear,—they would be back in the morning.

“ Well, then,” I replied, “ get my pipe ; I will sit here till sleep sends me to bed, and I am by no means disposed that way at present.”

I sat thus musing and smoking till daylight, and then mounted the hill with Owen in anxious expectation of seeing the canoe ; but nothing was to be seen, nor was there a fish left on the coast. I knew not what to think ; my fears increased sadly. That something extraordinary had happened I was thoroughly persuaded. I returned to my habitation dejected and melancholy, almost without knowing that I was going thither. About nine o'clock Job came running down the hill, and said he could see two people with the glass. Owen and I mounted immediately to the look-out ; and turning my eyes towards the Long Key, I saw the two persons plain enough, but no appearance of the canoe. We waited with impatience to see them put off ; but after watching them for two hours, to our very great surprise we saw them sit down as if quite unconcerned, and discovering no intention of returning. While I was speaking to Owen, Job called out to me to look. To my utter astonishment I saw the two persons enter the water in order to swim to the opposite shore. I immediately told Owen to get ready

the other canoe ; and we set off together with all expedition, leaving our family in terror and in tears. We paddled away as fast as our strength enabled us, and in about two hours landed opposite the place they swam for. Here we waited, with an anxiety not to be described, for their landing.

I seated myself on the beach, and in a melancholy mood looked on them as they drew near to the shore. To say what my poor heart suffered at this time is beyond my power. I sent Owen down to meet them ; my mind was so affected I could not go myself ; something terrible had happened, and I dreaded to know what. They soon joined me, and in accents of unfeigned grief related their dismal story, while I sat looking on the earth with my head on my knees, and my arms clasped round my legs, in silent sorrow. Poor Owen sat beside me with his left arm affectionately thrown upon my shoulder, his right hand pressing upon his knee, which was in continual motion, from the agitation of his mind : his eyes, which were bent towards me, were filled with tears. Poor fellow ! he wished to alleviate my sorrow by sharing it.

They said, when they got out about half a mile from Long Key, they saw a large fish tumbling about quite near them ; Harry took the dart in order to strike him, but Mr. Bell insisted that the dart and staff should be given up to him, which Harry complied with, knowing it to be my will that he should be obeyed in every thing. Mr. Bell then advanced forward, and sent the dart right into the fish near the tail. The moment it was struck it shot away to the southward with great speed, and they were obliged to heave out all the rope they had, with a large piece of wood fastened to the end of it. They said they never saw Mr. Bell in such high

spirits. They followed the fish to about a mile's distance, when they saw him rise again ; and coming up to the log of wood, they hauled in several fathoms of line, intending to cut it off lest the fish should carry it all away with him out of their reach. While they were doing this, Mr. Bell said to Harry, we will get as much of it as we can while he is so still. He had scarcely spoken the words when the fish gave a sudden turn, and with one stroke of his tail struck athwart the canoe with such a violent sweep, that they were at once beat into the sea. Harry said, that for his part it was some time before he could draw his breath, so as to have power to look round him. He soon discovered Rory's head at about a boat's length from him, but could no where see any thing of Mr. Bell ; and as they knew he could swim well, they concluded that the fish must have killed him with his tail, when the canoe was split with the same stroke from one end to the other, and they were obliged to swim back again to the Key.

I desired them to say no more, I had heard quite enough ; and then added, "when you have rested take me home ; what I have been now told will last me for many months."

Soon after this we put away for home, in perfect silence, not a soul speaking a word till we got to our landing-place. We were then surrounded by our whole family. I desired Harry and Owen to state what had happened, but begged that no one might trouble me for the present. This occasioned a gush of sorrow from the whole company. I walked to my cave in deep distress, with my arms folded, and threw myself upon my bed of leaves, in an agony of mind not to be described.

My wife soon came to me, weeping, and finding me unwilling to speak, she said, "Why you be mad sorry Penoly? You no break canoe; great fish break canoe. You no leave me and the children, like poor Bell, to kill great fish. You know you can't kill great fish; you no let Owen go to kill great fish. I did love Bell, for Bell very good; but why he be foolish mad to leave his wife to go catch great fish that be too strong for all men. You no do so; you love your wife and children too much for that. Come, then, get up and eat fish with me, and we will all love you as long as we have days."

"I know well enough," said I to her, "that poor Bell was much esteemed by you all; I loved him as a brother. Nature will have her way. When I can subdue my grief a little I will come and eat fish with thee; but till then do not let me be interrupted; keep every one away from me. My thoughts must be more composed; silence and reflection will assist me to compose them, and then I shall be myself again. Go to Janet, (said I) and be very kind to her."

Upon this she left me to my meditations. I now began to ruminate on past events and present circumstances. Why, thought I to myself, should I murmur at the infliction of Almighty wisdom? The great Director of all human events has ordered every thing for the best. The methods of his providence are beyond our comprehension; and so short-sighted are we, that what we lament as calamity, he uses as the means of conducting us to happiness. He has been pleased, by a variety of sufferings, to correct my wandering thoughts, and to lead me to the proper knowledge of my own insufficiency, and his infinite mercy. The experience of my past life has taught me, in a variety of

instances, the weakness and fallibility of human judgment, when opposed to Divine wisdom ; and how incapable we are of forming a just estimate of the happiness we are in pursuit of, and how liable to 'err in the means we adopt to obtain it. It is true my friend has been suddenly removed from me, before I had reflected in my own mind that such an event was ever to happen ; and yet in the order of nature it could not be otherwise, though the precise time, in compassion to our weakness and infirmities, was hid from our sight. Ought I not rather to thank my God that he was lent to me so long, to comfort and assist me, and to cheer my lonely hours in this solitary region ? I loved him as my friend. He returned my affection with sincere, unreserved, and zealous attachment. He is called away as my dear companion Somer was before. I am left behind to lament their loss, and perhaps to endure still greater sufferings ; but why they have been taken, and I am preserved, I am not permitted to inquire. It is my duty to submit. I bow my head in perfect resignation to thy Divine will, oh, my God ! Lead me as thou wilt, I will not complain. Make me, if it shall please thee, an instrument of happiness to others, during the short time I have to remain in this wilderness of sorrow. When I am to depart support me in the last struggles of expiring nature. When released from this earthly body, wash me clean in the blood of thy son, that through his merits I may obtain, what my own infirmities could not presume to expect, admission into thy heavenly kingdom.

CHAPTER XXXVIII

TWENTY-FIFTH YEAR OF MY RESIDENCE.

IT is now several months since my very sincere friend died. I have not had spirits to put my pen to paper till this time, being the month of May, in my twenty-fifth year. Perhaps I have indulged my melancholy to a criminal excess. But he was very dear to me; and, thus remote from the civilized world, the separation was doubly painful. I felt as if a part of myself was torn away—a part that was necessary to my well-being, and without which my existence would be imperfect, and without enjoyment. Since this fatal event, our lives have passed in the same melancholy round, day after day. Nothing of importance worth recording has occurred, except the determination of poor Bell's wife never to accept of another husband, however solicited by me or by her friends. This resolution my wife informs me she is sure she never will depart from.

My son Owen has been gone with Harry on a visit to our Indian neighbours above two months. The purpose of his journey was to obtain a wife, his passion for European women having subsided for a considerable time. I am, therefore, at the moment I am now writing, almost as forlorn as I was twenty years ago, as to my own colour. I must not forget to mention that Rory the other day found a young fawn in the back woods, which he led home. The sight of it brought to my remembrance the melancholy fate of

my faithful companion Miss Doe. He gave it to my wife, and she insists on rearing it; though I am not much for it; as those animals soon make themselves favourites, we get ourselves attached to them too fondly, and if by any accident they are lost or destroyed, we mourn for them almost as we would for a child. From tigers, indeed, I believe we have little to fear, as we have not seen any for years, though the woods are grown almost as ample as ever; but perhaps the constant fires we keep, and the continual chopping we make in all parts of them, may have driven these animals from this quarter. We are well pleased with their absence, as our stock of goats is very much increased.

CHAPTER XXXIX.

TWENTY-SIXTH YEAR.—AUGUST 20.

My son has been returned about a month, and has brought with him a young Indian girl, by name Bashada; she is grand-daughter to old Koimaloot, and not above fifteen years of age, yet she measures at least five feet four inches; she seems to be very agreeable both in temper and person, so that I am altogether pleased with his choice, and hope she will make a very cheerful addition to our little society. I have been sadly troubled lately with most violent pains in my limbs, so that I am often in such an agony

that I can get no sleep. I can scarcely hold a pen or any light thing in my hand, I have such an universal tremour; yet I can strike fish, and do other laborious work as easily as heretofore. I very much fear I shall soon be incapable of writing at all, unless my disease should abate, which I little expect from its nature, it being the consequence of fish-poison; in this I am strongly confirmed, as no one tasted of it but my daughter America, and she has exactly the same symptoms, but being young is less affected by them, and may soon outgrow them altogether. For my part I must prepare for the worst, as I am in continual pain. If my disorder increases, my days cannot be many more in this world.

October 30.—It is impossible for me to carry on my poor account much farther, having almost entirely lost the use of my right hand, and the other is but very indifferent; so that what is to be added to my Journal after this day, will be done by my son, as I shall direct him, or my brother Harry, as they both write tolerably well. I likewise find that at times my memory is much impaired, yet my daughter America is getting better every day, and seems to have but few symptoms of the poison left about her. How often have I feasted on red-snappers before, without danger! But so it is; Death has his agents every-where, by sea and by land; when the grand summons comes we must be gone; he will take no excuse. But let me be content; let me with patient silence bear my pain. I will not murmur at thy decree, oh, my God! I know this life is but a passage to a better; do Thou smooth the way before me, and support me to the end.

THE JOURNAL CONTINUED BY OWEN.

My dear father has been so bad in all his joints for more than six months, that we have been forced to feed him like a child; he is now getting somewhat better, and his pains grow less in consequence of the assistance of our good friends who have been here of late. They know many kinds of roots that are useful in disorders, particularly in expelling poison. But my poor father has lost much of the feeling in his limbs, and cannot at all times speak plain enough for us to understand him; he muffles so in his speech.

CHAPTER XL.

TWENTY-SEVENTH YEAR—JULY 21.

I HAD a son born, and we carried him into the cave to my father and mother. My father would have the child in his lap, and asked me what name we intended to give it. I desired he would call it what he liked best, but it was my wish it should be named Llewellyn, if he pleased. "Call him so, my son," said he. "I hope he will be more fortunate in his passage through this vale of tears than his grandfather. I give him my blessing freely, which is all I have to bestow."

About the middle of September, as my uncle and I were out in the bay fishing, two ships hove in sight, in the east quarter ; but as my father had now no longer any curiosity or care for such things, we let them pass to the southward, without stirring from our business, or giving ourselves any concern about them. When we came home we told him what we had seen. "I don't think, Owen," said he, "I shall ever see another sail with my eyes, unless I may be carried up the hill by some of you, should another appear before I die. And indeed, my dear son, I cannot think the day of my death very far off, if there be any truth in dreams. I dreamed last night that I was become a very ancient man, and that I lived alone at the old plantation. As I was walking along the strand by the Whale Point, methought I saw two men going on before me ; at last they stopped, as if they waited till I came up, which I did soon ; and to my great surprise I found them to be my old companions Somer and Bell. They seemed overjoyed at my joining them, and said there was a ship waiting for them at Boom Bay, bound for Europe ; and that if she did not sail that day, they would make interest with the captain to give me my passage. On saying which, they vanished from me in an instant, and I was left alone. The anxiety of my mind awakened me."

My father continued getting worse and worse ; and about three weeks after, young Somer came to me one morning early, and said my father wanted to see me immediately. I ran directly to him, and found my uncle Harry and most of the family there before me, which grieved me for fear he should think I neglected him by not coming sooner. He turned his eyes on me, and said, "Owen, come by my side ;" which I did,

and sat down by him on the right. He then called my uncle Harry, who seated himself on his left.

"Now," said he, "give me your hands, "I have a few words to say to you both." With a tone of great tenderness, he added, "Remember what I now deliver to you; love that woman," pointing to his wife, who was on her knees at his feet, "she deserves all your affection; be tender, be kind to her in her affliction. Love my children, protect and cherish them, and one another, living in perfect harmony together. Owen you are now a father; Harry has been so for some time; instruct your children in their duty to God, to their parents, and to the society to which they belong; teach them to be useful, in order to render themselves acceptable to their Maker, after the example of Him who went about doing good. I am about to leave you, my children; I shall never see another sun rise upon this world. Respect my memory. Lay me in the grave by your mother Luta. Preserve my Journal, and with care put it into the hands of the first European, or white man, that shall arrive on this coast; pay him handsomely, and beg him to deliver it safe to some of my countrymen. Tell my good Indian friends, that in my last moments I spoke of them with gratitude and tenderness. I trust they will continue their benevolent intentions towards you after I am gone. My sight begins to grow dim. Lead your mother to me that I may embrace her before I die. God bless you, my children."

He now sunk almost exhausted into her arms. We continued for some time silent. We could not suppress our grief, and retired from his presence. About sunset my mother sent for me in, and said, she believed my father was gone to England. He had sunk

away without a groan. Her hand was fast locked in his at the moment of his death, and continued so for some time after. The whole family were summoned together ; and such a scene of extravagant sorrow as took place is not to be described. My uncle Harry tore his hair, and beat his breast, and was altogether like a person out of his senses. The women were equally violent. I could have laid me down and died too. I did not wish to live. This scene continued during the whole night.

In the morning my uncle Harry came to me, and said, "Come, Owen, let us be men ; we must put our trouble out of sight. My brother, as you may remember, said, 'Lay me by Luta.' We will comply with his request, and then you shall stand in his place amongst us ; but we will let your mother direct as she pleases. He charged us to love her before he died, and whatever he wished us to do, that will we most willingly perform."

The next day, our hearts still throbbing with grief, I told my uncle that we would do whatever he wished. He had lived longest with my father, and knew best what would please him. He said he would do every thing in his power for the good of all. He instructed Rory how to make the grave ; and the body of my father was wrapped up in some old cloth, which remained in our store. He and Rory carried it to the grave. My mother and I walked close behind, and the rest followed. When we got there, the corpse was laid gently in the ground by my mother Luta, and Harry said he would do as exactly as he had seen my father when poor Somer was buried, and that all must say after him. He began with the Belief, and some other short sentences, and then ended with the Lord's

Prayer, which we all repeated together. Thus ended this melancholy ceremony.

My uncle advised with me, and we now judged it necessary to acquaint our countrymen with my father's death, and we thought Rory a proper person to convey this mournful intelligence. We therefore sent him over land, and he took his leave of us about a week after for this purpose.

About three months after came two canoes with our Indian friends to visit us. We entertained them as usual in my father's time. They desired to know whether we intended to break up and return with them, or remain where we were. We had made up our minds to continue in our old habitation, and to live after the same manner as before my father's death, and to comply with his wishes in every thing. We told them our resolution, and they were satisfied.

CHAPTER XLI.

TWENTY-EIGHTH YEAR.

WE had not seen one sail for a long time; but about August, as Job was on the hill, he discovered a fleet of about twenty vessels all standing to the southward. I got the glass, but they were so far out that I could not make much of them, and we lost sight of them towards the evening.

[Here the Journal breaks off abruptly.]

The following Letter gives some account how and by what means this Journal was conveyed to Europe. The address is unfortunately wanting.

MR. PAUL TAYLOR'S ACCOUNT OF THE JOURNAL.

BEING mate of a large brig, commanded by one Captain Smith, and lying at the Havannah, anno 1776, it happened that at the same time a Spanish sloop, late from the Main, lay near to us. Having some knowledge of the Spanish tongue, I became acquainted with the mate. He asked me one day to come on board and spend an hour or two with him, as he had something to shew me. The next day being Sunday, and nobody on board but himself and an old negro, I accepted his invitation. We had not been long together before he unlocked a cedar chest, and took out a bundle of old papers; he desired me to look at them, saying they were English. I asked him by what means they came into his hands. He said they were given to him by two Indians who spoke good English; and that one of them told him in Spanish, that the whole was written by his father, with a small addition by himself: that his father had lived there for many years, and had died there; making it his last request, that these papers should be put into the hands of the first person who would promise to deliver them to some trusty and

good Englishman, to be by him conveyed to his native country. 'They made me swear,' said he, 'that I would execute this commission justly and truly, and then gave me fifty pieces of eight, as a reward for undertaking it.'

Having taken in what water we wanted we left the coast. 'You,' said he, 'are the first Englishman I have met with ; if you will take charge of them, I am ready to deliver them into your hands ; if not, I will seek out some other ; and should I not succeed, will leave them with the governor.' I told him he might depend upon my care and attention to observe the directions of my countryman in every respect. Upon which he delivered me the Journal. I offered him the acknowledgment of a doubloon ; but he refused it, saying he should think himself a dishonest man to accept of any thing from me ; he had been well paid for his trouble, and was happy in having this opportunity of executing his promise to the two Indians who delivered the Journal to him.

I have carefully preserved it through many dangers. You will find, when you come to read it, many curious accounts of things, of the truth of which I have no doubt, though I did not know the man. During the time I was out of employ at Charlestown, I got it fairly copied out, and now send it to you, as some little return of kindness for the many friendly services you have shewn me. I doubt not but you will think it worthy of being laid before the public.

N.B. You may remember John Waters, who formerly sailed with Captain Dean ; he it was I employed

to copy it all out just as the author wrote it, and without the slightest alteration whatever; and he has really performed his part with great care and diligence.

Believe me,

Your very sincere friend,

PAUL TAYLOR.

New York May 2, 1783.



